



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

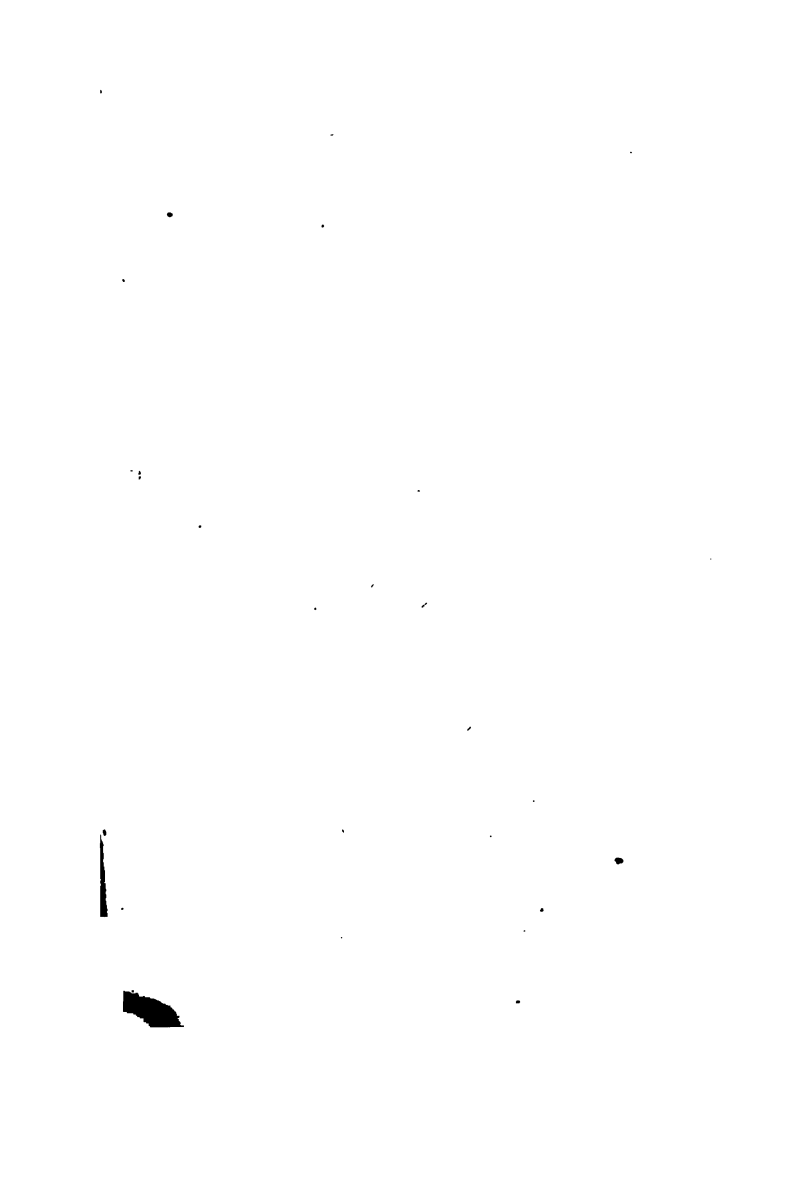
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









1. The first part of the document is a title page.

2.





ENGLAND

AND

ITS PEOPLE;

OR,

A FAMILIAR HISTORY OF THE COUNTRY, AND THE
SOCIAL AND DOMESTIC MANNERS OF
ITS INHABITANTS.

BY THE

Author of "General Reading for Schools," &c.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND CO.

65, Paternoster-Row.

1839.

6.



ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND SON,

65, Paternoster-Row;

AND AT WELLINGTON, SALOP.

1838.

INTRODUCTORY.

A CHILD asked me the other day “whether the language which we now speak in England was always spoken there?”

A brief reply in the negative was not enough; and as I found the History of the English language involved the History of the people who have from time to time lived in England, I saw that I could not give any account of one without the other. And thus I was led to talk and talk on, till by degrees becoming involved in a maze of gossip, I found my stories lengthen far beyond expectation.

Many people are content with the History of the *kings* of England, but this was not my case, I thought more of the multitude:—how the many thousands of England have fared as to the possession of the rich blessings which our heavenly Father has given to his creatures; what use they

have made of reason, and faith, and conscience ; also, how the nation grew up from its infancy into manhood, and learned or neglected the lessons of experience : this was my idea of National History ; and therefore, though it was impossible for me to tell or write the hundredth part of what I wished, I was led to ramble about, making a sketch here and there of what principally struck me.

A few of these sketches are here presented to the reader, arranged with as much attention to order as I can give.

The reigns, after the conquest, of the respective monarchs, the dates, and often the personal history of the kings, have been noticed ; but if the little work has any merit, it is chiefly in the attention which has been paid to the progress of Education, of Religion, of Manners, Habits, and Institutions.

ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

THE BRITISH AND SAXONS.

SEVERAL different races of people have in turn ruled over this country of England, and the language, in consequence, has been mixed up and altered a great deal from time to time.

The first we know of England, is, that its inhabitants were called Britons; but, even at that time, we are told, they did not all speak one language; the northern and southern, eastern and western people differed.

They were divided into tribes, which had each its separate chief. They were half naked, or only clothed with the skins of beasts.

Their priests ruled over them with great authority: they were called Druids, and used to perform their religious rites in the depths of forests, and particularly under old oaks.

They used to offer up human beings as victims at their altars, under the notion of pleasing their God.

*Druids.*

Such a people were the ancient Britons. But that powerful race of men, the Romans—that same people which ruled over Judæa when our Saviour was born—came to England, and conquered it, and retained the possession for four hundred following years.

After *that* four hundred were past and gone, however, the Romans quitted England, and the Britons were left to themselves for awhile; but, ere very long, another foreign people, called the Saxons, came upon them, and by degrees they were conquered by them also.

These enemies proved much worse foes to the Britons than even the Romans had been. They *killed them* without mercy, and obliged all who *remained alive* to leave the country. Some of *them took refuge* in Wales.

*Romans.*

The Britons never, from that time, were able to re-conquer England; but their descendants have remained ever since in Wales, still speaking their ancient language. And from this time the English people have been a mixed race, made up first of the Saxons and Danes, (of whom you will hear,) and afterwards of the Normans.

The Saxons at first divided England into seven kingdoms, each having a king of its own; but, after about four hundred more years, all these smaller kings and kingdoms became subject to one supreme king, called Egbert, and he was crowned King of England at Winchester, in Hampshire.

And it was at this time that the Bishop of Rome sent a missionary, called Augustine, to



Saxons.

England, to convert the Anglo Saxons (or English as they were now called) to Christianity; and several of the chiefs of the Saxon kingdoms were baptized, with many of their subjects.

From this time the English became very zealous in building churches and religious houses, in which men and women lived separately, and gave up all their time to prayer and praise and works of charity; some of them being really blessings to the land, but others being guilty, it is to be feared, of sad hypocrisy.

For the most part, they knew but little of the Christian religion as Christ himself taught it. As there were no printed books, there could be very few copies of the Bible; since all they had, were written out by the hands of men; and even if *there had been more*, the people were not able to *read*.

So that, for the most part, they trusted to what

the monks, who lived in the religious houses, told them; and sometimes they told them truly what was in the Bible, and sometimes they told them false, according as they (the teachers) were bad or good, or ignorant or well-informed men.

Among these dark and ignorant people, there suddenly started up a king who was far beyond his time in almost every respect, and whose name it is always pleasant to meet with and repeat,—the good king Alfred.

ALFRED THE GREAT.

He was the fourth son of one of our Saxon kings, whose name was Ethelwolfe. His mother used to instruct him as far as it was in her power; and it is said that he was first led to take pains for his own improvement by hearing her repeat or sing some poems in the Saxon language.



Alfred and his Mother.

They were written on parchment, and he wished to read them for himself. He was at this time about twelve years old, and as he took the greatest pains, he was soon able to read. He then learned Latin.

But Alfred could not pursue any quiet study long. He was called to the throne when still very young; and his kingdom was soon too full of trouble for him to think of any thing else.

The Danes, a fierce and warlike people from the north, had for some years past been trying to get a footing in England. These Danes were all heathens, and worshipped cruel gods, who, they believed, delighted in war and bloodshed.

They lived but little on dry land: for it was the custom in Denmark, as well as in several other northern countries, to send out all the sons of their kings, except one, to seek their fortune on the sea; and thus they were called sea-kings.

"The sea was their country, and their ships their home." They were turned adrift to roam about, and pick up a livelihood where they might; and they thus became the dread and torment of all the neighbouring nations.

At midnight, when the poor people in the villages near the coasts of England or France were asleep and unguarded, one of the sea-kings' vessels would cast anchor near the shore, and the crew landing, would suddenly surround the poor natives, killing and taking them prisoners, burning their villages, and driving their cattle down to the ships.

These Danes and Northmen grew bolder and

bolder as time passed ; and being tired at length of their uncertain life, they wished to take possession of some countries that they could call their own. Hence it was that they sent armies and fleets to England, and constantly harassed the people on all sides.

When Alfred came to the throne, they had possession of Northumberland, and also of Norfolk and Suffolk ; and when at first he gathered his armies together to give them battle, he was so unfortunate as to be conquered by them.

After another battle, however, he was more successful, and the Danes were glad to make a treaty with him, agreeing to leave the kingdom ; but they were so far from keeping their word, that they merely moved from one place to another, still burning and destroying wherever they came.

It is said, that, at this time, Alfred forgot his duty to his country for a space ; that he was tired of struggling against the Danes, and gave himself up to pleasure and indolence ; so that his subjects lost their confidence in him, and deserted him, yielding tamely to their enemies.

But we are told too, that the king had a kind and faithful friend, who was as a father to him, and who rebuked and reasoned with him ; and his words touched Alfred's heart to the very quick, and awoke his sleeping conscience.

And he had yet a better teacher : sorrow, heavy sorrow, came upon him. He found himself on a sudden deserted by his people, and saw the whole land conquered by the Danes ; so that his only means of safety was in putting on the dress of a

peasant, and hiding himself in a wild part of the country in the house of a herdsman.

He dared not make known his rank to this poor herdsman, lest he should be tempted to betray him ; but offering to do any work that was required for his host, he remained living as a servant for some time in this obscure place.

On one occasion, the herdsman's wife desired him to attend to some cakes which were baking at the fire, while she was absent from the cottage : but the poor king, whose thoughts were always busy about his country and his own sad fate, forgot her orders, and let the cakes burn.

When the good woman came in, she was very angry, and called him many hard names, little knowing whom she was scolding. But Alfred allowed he had deserved her rebuke, and took it all with a patient heart.

All this time he was probably reflecting on what had been amiss in his past conduct, and planning how to make himself more fit to be the king of his people, if ever it pleased God to try him once more. And he was tried, and not found wanting. After a considerable time had passed, bands of his friends collected together, and attacked the Danes at different points.

They were able to do this with the more chance of success, because the Danes had disgusted the English beyond endurance by their cruelties, and because now, fancying themselves every where conquerors, they were become very careless.

Having succeeded in one or two small enter-

prizes, Alfred's friends came to tell him of their hopes; and he, being fully prepared to deliver his people from their cruel foes, determined to take the risk upon himself of going into the very midst of the Danish camp, that he might see how it could best be attacked.

He put on the dress of a harper, and went with his harp near the camp, playing on his instrument in such a manner as greatly to delight the Danes, who were great lovers of music, and held the harper's art in high honour.



Alfred as a Harper.

They invited Alfred into the camp, and men took him to the tent of their Prince, Guthrum, with whom he remained some few days, making his remarks upon the camp, and the state of defence in which the Danes appeared to be.

When he had made himself master of their counsels, he returned to his people, and assem-



put upon him; a sword in a golden sheath was hung at his side; and his belt was studded with jewels.

And little Athelstan was always at his grandfather's side; and, when King Alfred was in pain, he it was who used to sit by him, and prattle to him, or wipe the cold sweat from his forehead.

And his aunt Ethelfleda, who was Alfred's favourite daughter, and was reckoned "the wisest lady in England," used to share his watchings; and, when King Alfred was gone, she taught Athelstan all she knew.



Saxon Ladies.

When he was old enough to travel, he went abroad to see other countries. He went with one of his father's captains to make a voyage of *discovery* in the Northern Ocean; and either *then*,

or at some other time, he visited King Harold, of Norway.

Though the sea-kings that were sent from Norway and Denmark were so terrible a race, living only by plunder and war, the kings who remained at home were somewhat better; and King Harold was desirous that his own eldest son, who was to rule over Norway at his death, should learn some of the useful arts which were known in England, and had not yet found their way into Norway.

King Harold was a heathen himself, like the rest of his people, and he had no wish that his son should be a Christian; but thought he might learn many useful things from the Saxons. They were skilful in working in metals, in building, and in music. Their laws were good. They could write and read too; and King Harold had great respect for these wonderful and mystical arts.

When young Athelstan, then, arrived at Norway, Harold paid him every possible attention; and made him promise, that, when he was King of England, he would receive Harold's little son, Haco, at his court, and would be like a father to him, and teach him every thing worth his learning.

In due time King Edward of England died; and Athelstan succeeded; and, as soon as he was fairly seated on the throne, messengers came from King Harold, reminding him of his promise, and bringing him, as a present, a beautiful ship, built in Norway, for the Northmen were skilled in ship-building.



A Norway Ship.

You may fancy these rude and savage-looking warriors delivering their message to King Athelstan, who, though a brave man himself, was also fond of study, and courteous and gentle in his manners.

He willingly promised to receive young Haco whenever his father thought proper to send him, and bestowed upon Harold, in return for the ship, a fine sword, the handle of which was adorned with precious stones.

In due time young Haco came. He was a very amiable affectionate youth, and had gained the name of "Haco the good," in his own land. He was, of course, quite ignorant of Christianity. He had a high opinion of the courage and manliness of the Northmen; and it could not have been very pleasant to him to find how ill they *were thought of* in England: for all the people of

land held them in abhorrence; and many derided at King Athelstan receiving the son of orthman at his palace.

ut Athelstan did not regard this. He was id-hearted man and a good king; and at this time had under his care two other young ces, whom he instructed and guided as far as ould in the right way.

thelstan and all his court were Christians. r faith, indeed, was mixed with many sutitious notions and practices. They had too h confidence in men like themselves, who, use they were Bishops and Monks, were ed upon as fountains of truth: and such they : in some degree; but the truth was often ed with human error.

ill they were Christians. Large portions of Bible had been translated into the Saxon ue, and the king, and the learned people of land, could also read Latin. They knew the acter of our Blessed Lord: how holy, how k, how pure he was; and, far as they were i copying him faithfully, all this light had been given them in vain.

hen Haco came to England, there was, of se, a great deal to excite his wonder. He greatly astonished when he first arrived, at sight of so many men and women in sin-r habits, dwelling by themselves in large dings, and spending their time in attending he sick, feeding the hungry, singing psalms, ng prayers, and occasionally writing crooked acters on large skins of parchment or vellum.



A Saxon Abbot and Archbishop.

By degrees he learned what they were, and what they taught. King Athelstan wished him to be a Christian, and took much pains to have him instructed by the monks; but there were many among the people, who, instead of compassionating the ignorance of heathens, were very severe towards them, and would scarce look upon them with any kindness.

But Haco, not being taught by any but gentle and kind instructors, learned to think well of Christians; and, in time, he became a Christian himself: and, when he went back to his native land, he strove with all his might to lead his subjects to be Christians also.

That you may see that Haco had cause to love Athelstan, I will tell you a little story of him.

During this king's reign, the nation was several

times troubled by the Danes, who sent large armies into the country, and did great damage there. On one of these occasions, Anlaf, the Danish king, came with an army of his subjects, and put the Saxons into great peril.

Athelstan marched forward to meet them. One night when the two armies were encamped within view of one another, there came a harper to the English camp; and King Athelstan was pleased with his music, and gave him money.

When he had left the camp, a soldier chanced to follow him, and saw him throw away the king's money. This convinced the soldier that he was an enemy. He watched him more closely, and perceived that it was Anlaf himself, the Danish king.

Now this soldier had once received a kindness from Anlaf, and he could not bear to betray him; so, waiting till he was in safety, he *then* went to Athelstan, and told him the discovery he had made.

All the officers of Athelstan were very angry with the poor soldier for having let Anlaf escape; but the king commended the man, and said he had but done his duty in not forgetting a benefit.

If Athelstan had not been a generous and good man, he would not so readily have applauded the soldier; for there is no doubt, that, if Anlaf had been captured, it would have been a source of great triumph to him.

We admire the soldier too. He well knew he should have been richly rewarded for his information: he had reason to fear punishment for his

concealment; but yet he would not be ungrateful: and he was no traitor; for the moment Anlaf was safe he gave the alarm, that the king might be prepared for an attack from the enemy.

The Saxon kings had their palace in London; but they chiefly lived at Winchester. Alfred the Great had there built a monastery, where his own body was interred, and also that of his queen, and their son Edward; and only about sixty-three years ago a stone was discovered in the ground where this monastery stood, with the words "*Alfred Rex*" upon it in Saxon characters.

Winchester was a strong built town: it was walled round, and the only entrances were by four heavy stone gates. Beyond the walls were very deep ditches, except on one side, where the river Itchin formed the defence.

The Saxons were very heavy eaters; they used to live a great deal upon pork; also, upon eels and fish of different kinds; and they drank ale and mead in large quantities.

Their tables were served in what we should now think a savage fashion. There was here and there a knife for the royal guests, who sat at the raised table above the rest; and *these* had silver cups and fine wheaten bread: but lower down in the hall each person brought his own knife; the bread was black, and the drink very inferior. While they sat at dinner, gleemen or minstrels played on their harps, or sang songs to the company.

The houses of the king, and the very great *men*, had the luxury of glass windows; and were,

besides, built of brick or stone; but they had not now, nor for long after this time, any other floor than the bare ground trodden and beaten hard, and strewed with rushes. In the king's palace the rushes were changed more frequently, of course; but, even in the houses of the noblemen, they remained till the dirt and smell were very offensive.

The walls of the king's private room were hung with a kind of tapestry worked by the ladies of the court, for the Saxon women were the best workwomen in the world, and their dresses and the king's and priests' garments were often richly embroidered by their hands.

The king's bed was boarded at the head and feet, and had sometimes a single curtain hung from the side furthest from the wall; the pillows were of straw, and also the bed; there was one sheet and a coverlet of bear's-skin.

As for the poor peasants, they had no beds but of leaves or rushes; they could not afford glass, and had either no window at all in their huts, or a small aperture screened with horn, scraped very thin, so as to admit some light; they had no chimneys, and the smoke of their fires either made its way through a hole in the roof or out at the door.

Their general dress was a linen or woollen tunic, something like a labourer's frock, fastened with a belt round the middle; and this was made of finer or coarser fabric, and ornamented or not, according to the rank of the wearer: over this was thrown a short cloak.

There were drawers reaching half way down the thigh, and stockings or buskins meeting them. The poorest people, however, were nearly bare-legged; but all seem to have worn shoes.

It is worth noticing, that the punishment of death was not in use at the time of Athelstan. Offenders were tried by a jury; and there were fines in money, or servitude, or branding, or the loss of members, according to the offence; but it was not till the reign of Edmund, one of Athelstan's successors, that a law was made, proclaiming, that when gangs of robbers were made prisoners, the oldest among them should be hung on a gallows. Athelstan reigned sixteen years.

THE DANES.

About one hundred and seventeen years after the death of Alfred, the Saxon princes having become very weak and effeminate, lost their respect in England; and the Danes, who, in the course of this time, had been improving in arts and arms, attacked them with such vigour, that they drove the Saxon king out of the kingdom of England; and Sweyn, the Danish king, ascended the throne in his stead.

However, he died almost immediately; but his son Canute succeeded him; and, having completely subdued the English, he united in himself the government of England, Denmark, and Norway. Hence he was called Canute the Great.

Many of the Danes who had been taken prisoners at different times by the English, or who lived among them, had been baptized; and Canute himself was a Christian.

His temper and conduct after he was fully settled in the government of England, improved greatly; and he governed the people, on the whole, wisely and well.

As his Danish troops were very fierce and warlike, he made some severe laws against quarrelling and bloodshed; but, unhappily, in a fit of violent anger, he was himself the first to break these laws, by killing a soldier with his own hand.

As soon as he had committed the act, however, recollecting himself, he gathered his troops together; and, confessing his crime, he begged that they would judge him as if he had been one of themselves. They were silent, and at length left the punishment to himself.

The king immediately sentenced himself to pay a fine, nine times the amount of that which he had fixed as the penalty for offenders of lower rank.

Another time, when in the Cathedral at Winchester, he took off his crown with a deep feeling of humility, and hung it on the crucifix; nor could he ever prevail on himself to take it down from thence and wear it again.

But the most striking thing recorded of him, is his strong rebuke to his courtiers for their impious flattery.

He was sitting one day on the sea-shore,

watching the billows as they rolled ; and, while he gazed, his courtiers surrounded him, whispering into his ear such words as they thought would gratify his vanity and gain themselves his favour.



Canute at the Sea.

Among other things they told him he was all-powerful, that nothing could resist him.

For a short space, the king heard them quietly. The tide was fast coming in, and every wave approaching nearer to Canute's seat : the water at last washed over his feet.

"Thou art under my dominion," said he to the ocean : "this is my land ; approach no further, nor dare to wet thy sovereign's feet."

The courtiers stood around, wondering, till the waves approaching so fast that it was no longer safe to remain : the king looked sternly at them, and rebuked them, for giving him honours to which only God has a claim.

Canute reigned nineteen years: he died about 1035.

THE SAXONS AGAIN.

EDWARD THE CONFESSOR.

The Danish government in England lasted for about fifty-eight years; reckoning from Sweyn's conquest. Though Canute had been an able and just sovereign, his successors were great tyrants; and the English were dreadfully oppressed by their foreign masters.

At the end of the fifty-eight years, on the death of one of these Danish kings, the ancient noblemen of the kingdom, gathering their followers together, called to the throne a new king of Saxon race; who was afterwards named Edward the Confessor.

Among those of the English who expelled the Danes, and fixed Edward on the throne, was Earl Godwin, a famous man in his day, who had a beautiful daughter, named Editha; and this lady King Edward married. It was thought, however, that he did not marry her out of love to her; but only out of fear of her father's power: and certainly he was not kind to her.

Though King Edward was English by his father's side, yet his mother was a Norman; and, in Normandy, King Edward had spent great part of his life: and though he was now come to rule

over the English, his heart was with his mother's kindred.

He brought over many French nobles with him, and put them into places of honour: and the English felt themselves slighted by him. Earl Godwin was a harsh rough man, and would not conceal his anger; but the gentle Editha, who was likened to "a rose growing out of a thorny stem," tried to soften matters between them.

Yet she did not succeed: nor, indeed, had she much opportunity of trying her power; for King Edward sent her away to the monastery, at Winchester, and there she remained the rest of her days.

King Edward had no son; but the real heir to his crown was his nephew, Edgar Atheling. Earl Godwin, however, had still a great deal of power over the mind of the king; and as he was an ambitious man, he did all he could to make him proclaim his own son Harold the heir.

In this he did not succeed, for the king died without having come to any decision; but Harold being on the spot, and having much influence over the court, prevailed on the people at once to acknowledge him as king.

THE NORMANS.

WILLIAM THE I., CALLED ALSO WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR.

It was now near six hundred years since the Saxons had been fixed in England, and since the Danes were chased into Wales, or brought into subjection. They had dropped the name of Saxon, and were called English, wherever they were settled.

They had of late been declining as a people; they were becoming slothful and heavy, greedy and luxurious livers; and, though among them there were to be found a great many simple virtues, their vices were on the increase.

At the death of King Edward the Confessor, who had assumed the crown by the consent of the people, found himself immediately opposed by a very powerful enemy.

The Normans, who occupied that part of France which is called Normandy, were the descendants of our old acquaintance the sea-kings; they had become a people greatly superior to the Saxons in warlike arts, and they were also more numerous.

The chief of this people, William, Duke of Normandy, was a man of great ability; and many of his followers were also men of sufficient

quickness and information to make them formidable antagonists to the English.

They were a most enterprising people : had spared no pains to make themselves accomplished in all the arts which were practised in those days. Many of them had begun to visit the East, and their taste in architecture and poetry was on the increase.

But at the same time they were a stern, harsh, tyrannical race ; and, despising with all their hearts the native English, you will find that they practised on them every species of injustice and cruelty.

The Duke William of Normandy no sooner heard of the death of Edward the Confessor, than he determined to invade England. He pleaded an old promise which he had in former times obliged Harold to make, when he had him in his power ; but Harold, though he allowed having made the promise, said he should not keep it, as it was only wrested from him by fear of William's power.

And he gathered together a very large army, and landed in Sussex. Harold, also, hastily assembled all his forces, and went to meet him. The armies met near Hastings ; and William sent an offer to Harold to decide the battle by single combat, and thus spare the blood of their soldiers. This Harold refused, and both the armies spent the night in sight of each other ; the English in songs and feasting, the Normans in devotion.

At day-break the battle began : it was a *dreadful* combat, and both the English and Nor-

mans fought bravely ; but, after a terrible slaughter, Harold, making a furious attack at the head of his English with their heavy battle-axes, was slain by an arrow from the Norman army ; and, when *he* fell, the enemy easily obtained a victory over his dispirited army.



Battle of Hastings.

Thus William won the Battle of Hastings, and, by it, the crown and kingdom of England. The flower of the English lay dead on the field ; and the people, quite overpowered by the calamity, made no opposition. The clergy came to meet him, submitting themselves to his government ; and, when he reached London, he was immediately crowned at Westminster Abbey : and thus ended the Saxon kings.

WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR, CONTINUED.

It was in the year of our Lord 1066, that the

Saxon race was driven from the throne of England, and the Normans began to reign.

There was not much difference between the Normans and Saxons at this period in their dress or general fashions. King Edward the Confessor, having lived much in Normandy, and brought many French over with him; his Saxon subjects learned to affect their habits and manners; and, at court, Norman-French was spoken.

They wore the tunic shorter; their cloaks were smaller; and their hairs were clipped, and their beards shaven in imitation of the French; but still the bulk of the people in England spoke the Saxon tongue, and wore their hair and beards long: all except the priests, who were close shaven at the back of the head.

But when King William came, and brought with him a host of his Norman knights, whom he put into all places of power and authority, he made it his aim to do away as fast as possible with all the English fashions, that the people might consider themselves as all one race, and that there might not be hostility against himself and his followers.

In managing this point, however, he had more trouble than you can well imagine; for, on the one hand, he was surrounded by fierce Norman barons and knights, who had followed him to England for the sake of what could be gained there; and who were so powerful in themselves, that King William trembled on the throne for fear of them.

And, on the other hand, there were the English

or Saxons, who found themselves stripped of their family estates, and of all the honours they had been used to enjoy; and seeing the greediness of the Normans, felt themselves much aggrieved, and were continually disposed to break out into rebellion.

It was natural that the king should be more partial to his own people than to the conquered nation; and natural that the English should be jealous and impatient of the tyranny of their masters; but, at first, William endeavoured to steer a just course among them.

After a very little while, however, we find that he gave way to his Normans; and the history of the poor English from this period, and for several reigns afterwards, was a melancholy one.

Not merely did the king put his nobles into all the best of the estates of the Saxons, and allow them to build castles, where they ruled like so many little kings over all the people round them, but he sent over to Normandy for Norman priests, and turned many of the Saxon monks and bishops out of their offices to make way for them.

This grieved the people extremely. The Norman priests had, many of them, been accustomed to go to war, like common soldiers, and they tyrannized over the Saxons terribly.

Among other instances of this, there was, at Croyland, in Lincolnshire, an old and very celebrated monastery, where, in former times, the Saxon abbots and monks had lived in great state, and where they had often afforded shelter and hospitality to the poor and distressed.

And there was a smaller religious dwelling belonging to this monastery, built at some little distance from it; and, unfortunately, very near the dwelling of a great Norman follower of King William, named Ives Tailbois.

This nobleman wanted to get possession of the monks' dwelling, and bring over some Normans instead of them, to place in it.

The monks, however, were so peaceable, that it was difficult to find fault with them. They always took care to approach him with the greatest respect, bending one knee to the earth as they spoke: they would not retort upon him when he spoke sharply to them.

But when they found that he let loose his dogs upon them and their poultry and sheep, and killed and maimed their cattle, they quietly packed up all their books, their vestments, and vessels, and banished themselves from their own house and dwelling.

It was the king's wish to do away with the English or Saxon language as much as possible; and he consequently caused all the laws, and all the different public papers, to be written in Norman-French; and his bishops seized all the copies they could find of the Scriptures and of religious books which were written in Saxon; and caused the prayers and service to be performed in the Latin tongue, which none of the common people, nor even the nobles, understood.

And the king set on foot schools for the people, and ordered that nothing but French or Latin *should* be taught in these schools, that the mid-

dle classes might the sooner forget their native tongue.

But yet, with all this, and though a sort of Norman-French was written and spoken for a great many years by the better classes in England, it is curious to find how much more of the Saxon there is in our tongue *now* than of the French.

For instance, out of sixty-nine words which make up the Lord's Prayer, there are only five words which are not Saxon.

Among other acts of William the Conqueror which distressed the English greatly, was his laying waste large tracts of land, and converting them into forests; where the deer were reared, and where no Englishman was allowed to enter under very heavy penalties.

The Normans were all fond of the chase: and, in order to obtain game and room for the exercise of their sports, they made no scruple of turning the poor out of their houses and lands; and, if one of the English ventured to shoot at a stray deer, he was either put to death, or sentenced to lose an eye or a hand.

The English were not allowed to have arms in their houses; and they were obliged to put out their fires and lights at the sound of the curfew-bell, about eight o'clock in the evening. This was not an uncommon law in France and other parts of Europe at that time, and it had been used in England long before; but it was unpopular among the people.

William the Conqueror was not a happy man. He looked round him, and saw none in whom he

might trust: the Normans with their castles and large bands of armed followers—the injured Saxons with their angry feelings, and the remembrance of their forefathers' glory—and his own children, also; all conspired to vex and distress him.

For William had three sons, Robert, and William Rufus, and Henry; and from their very boyhood these were all inclined to quarrel with one another. Robert was a bold and brave boy, and had some generosity; but he accused his brothers of setting his father against him, and this, whether true or not, was resented by them.

One day, partly in spite, and partly in frolic, William and Henry took it into their heads to throw water over Robert, as he was passing through a court in the castle. The prince flew into a passion, and drawing his sword, ran up stairs to be revenged; and, had it not been for the exertions of the servants, and even of the king himself, he would certainly have committed some terrible act of vengeance on the spot.

Nothing could prevail on him, as it was, to remain under the same roof with his brothers; but he went off that very night to the city of Rouen.

From this time Robert went to war with William and Henry, and even with his father, for the possession of Normandy; which King William had left when he came to conquer England: and a great many of the Normans, and also the King of France, assisted him, and proclaimed Robert Duke of Normandy.

But King William would not submit thus to lose his ancient dukedom, though it was to a son;

and, as he had brought over Normans to conquer England, so now he carried back English to conquer Normandy.

The armour which was worn in those days covered the body all over: even the face was only partially seen; and when King William met his son Robert in battle, neither of them knew the other.

And Robert, being young and strong, attacked his father with such violence, that he was in great danger: he was wounded in the hand; his horse fell from under him; and the prince was just lifting up his hand to strike off his head, when William called out, and Robert knew his father's voice.



William the Conqueror and his son Robert fighting.

Then this passionate young man was so shocked at the thought of the crime he had been about to commit, that he leaped off his horse and threw himself on his knees, entreating his father to for-

The old king wept, and took him to his arms, and all the soldiers saw that the father and son were reconciled that day.

There is still in existence at the town of Bayeux, in Normandy, a very curious piece of needlework, called, the Bayeux tapestry. It is two hundred and twelve feet in length, and is worked in coloured worsteds, like a sampler.

It is generally supposed to have been worked by William the Conqueror's wife, Matilda; but, at any rate, it must have been worked not much later than the conquest of England.

It is a sort of picture history, and the object of it was to shew forth all the events of the conquest: and we find there King Harold promising William to give up his claim to England; and then the Conqueror's coming over with his army; and the Battle of Hastings, &c.; all worked in worsted.

It is curious to look at this piece of workmanship, now more than seven hundred years old; and to see by it the dresses, the armour, &c. of our ancestors.

There we see the *hauberk*, that curious tunic made of steel rings, which for a long time was manufactured with more or less fineness for the soldiers of those days: sometimes the whole body glittered over with lozenges or diamonds of steel, which were woven in with the rings.

Then each warrior carried his shield upon his arm, and on the shield was generally some figure or motto, which was peculiar to himself or his family. Sometimes it was a lion, sometimes a dragon,

mes a hart; all according to the wearer's but it was reckoned a great disgrace to his shield: they were, at this time, much the shape of a boy's kite.

Normans made great use of bows and , which were unknown to the Saxons; and weapons in their hands were the most fatal of any known before the invention of powder.

is always a horrible and dreadful calamity ; but, in those times, it was far worse than men fought hand to hand; and the contest then gained more by main strength than by

WILLIAM RUFUS, OR WILLIAM II.

is is the Latin word for red; and the colour William the Second's hair being red, gained the name.

William the Conqueror, having reigned in England twenty years, died in the year 1087; and, in his will given Normandy to his eldest son Robert, he afterwards bestowed England on William, the second son; while Henry, the

have had England, as well as Normandy; and they encouraged this bold and passionate young prince to conspire against William Rufus.

But William, though a brutal savage himself, and perhaps as little worthy of wearing a crown as ever monarch was, was shrewd enough to gain over many people to his side; while Robert, being imprudent and squandering away all his money, soon lost every advantage, and was more at his brother's mercy every day.

Just at this time a very great number of the chief nobles and kings in Europe were stirred up to go into the holy country of Judæa, where our Saviour had lived and taught while on earth; there to fight against the unbelieving nations who had got possession of this sacred ground.

Not only had Mahometans and others gained possession of Jerusalem and the neighbouring countries, but it was feared that they would push on their conquests much further; and that, if the Christians did not attack them, they would be in great danger.

They had already acquired greater part of Spain; and their dominion extended a great way in Africa: it was therefore not merely a holy war, though the monks generally represented it so; and though a great number of people went solely for the purpose of rescuing Jerusalem, there was no doubt a necessity for checking the progress of Mahometans.

However it might be, there certainly never was so much ardour in any wars as in these wars of the Cross, otherwise called **CRUSADES**; and the

pope, who was the great bishop of the Church, and all the religious men, spared no labour in preaching up to the kings and nobles of Europe, the duty of going to these crusades.

They who intended to go, put a red cross upon their shoulders as a sign that they were devoted to this cause; and many noble warriors turned their backs upon their country, and families, and friends, for several years; and went to encounter all the dangers and hardships of the crusades.

They who went were often tossed about in their small inconvenient vessels for a length of time: sometimes they were driven on shore in Africa; sometimes on strange islands; and, not being used to the climate, many of them took fevers in consequence of the burning heat, and many fell victims to the plague.

Among those who were inspired with the strongest desire to attack the infidels in the Holy Land, was Robert, of Normandy, the eldest brother of William Rufus; but the undertaking was expensive, and he had, as I have told you, squandered his wealth very foolishly.

It came into his mind then, to pledge his dukedom of Normandy to his crafty brother William, who was always ready enough to take advantage of his troubles; and he, accordingly, paid Robert ten thousand marks: and Robert gave up Normandy and went off to the Holy Land.

But William did not long enjoy his bargain. While he was hunting in the great New Forest, which his father had made, a gentleman, called

Walter Tyrrell, who was hunting with him, shot an arrow at a deer that was running by.

Before the arrow reached the deer, it struck the bough of a tree, which changed its direction, and it pierced the heart of William Rufus, who was at that moment riding under the tree, and he fell down dead on the spot.

So little did the people care about him, that they let his body lie unnoticed for some time in the forest, and not even his brother Henry, who was hunting in another part of the wood, came to



Death of Rufus.

look at it; but, at last, it was brought in by some poor country people, and buried.

HENRY I, OR BEAUCLERC.

And now there were but two of William the Conqueror's sons left ; and William Rufus had left no children ; so, that either Robert or Henry was to be King of England.

But Robert was afar off in the Holy land, and Henry was on the spot, and had got possession of the royal treasure, and was, besides, in love with an English lady, Matilda, the niece of that Edgar Atheling who should have been king when Edward the Confessor died.

And when Henry had married her, the English were in hopes they should be treated with more kindness by the Normans than heretofore ; and that Matilda, who was one of themselves, would be able to procure them some privileges from Henry.

They knew little of Robert ; but Henry had lived among them, and the priests liked him best, because he was a scholar, and had got the name of Beauclerc, which is French for good scholar.

So Henry was proclaimed king : nor was any thing heard of poor Robert till after the marriage had taken place.

*Henry I.*

Then he came back again from his crusade, and laid claim to the English throne: but his brother offered to give him a certain sum of money if he would renounce this claim; and it was agreed that if Henry died without children, Robert should succeed him.

Robert was very well content with this, and lived two months with his brother in England; after which he returned to Normandy. But he was, every way, a sad manager: he neglected the necessary affairs both of his household and his kingdom. Sometimes his subjects cheated him; and sometimes he pillaged them; and at length they were so weary of him, that they petitioned Henry to come over and take the government of Normandy upon himself.

And Henry, who was ambitious and selfish, very readily caught at this, and not only took Normandy to himself, but carried back his brother Robert a prisoner to England, and shut him up in Cardiff Castle, where the poor prince remained all the rest of his life; and, I am afraid, if the whole truth were known, it would be found that he was treated with great cruelty while thus confined.

His death did not happen until twenty-eight years after; and he was buried in Gloucester Cathedral, where there is his tomb, with a figure in armour lying upon it, carved in heart of oak: the tomb too is made of wood in the shape of a chest, and the figure is covered with a wire grating to preserve it: the head has a coronet on it; and the body has a hauberk of chain mail; and the legs are crossed, to shew that he was a crusader.

Henry, though King of England, was not happier than his father had been. He had a son, William, who was to be his heir, and whom he exceedingly loved. This son was returning with his sister and another brother from Normandy. King Henry was not with them in the vessel by which they came, which was called "The White Ship."

It was quite a new vessel, and commanded by a captain, called Fitz-Stephen; but this man allowed the sailors to get drunk, and they drove the ship upon a rock.

As soon as Fitz-Stephen saw the danger, he got out the boat and put the prince into it; but just as they were leaving the vessel, William heard his sister's voice, and he could not bear to leave her to be drowned.

Then, when he came near the ship to take her in, so many people jumped into the little boat, that it sank, and they were all drowned.



Shipwreck of Prince William and Matilda.

This calamity affected the king so much, that he never smiled again. His queen, Matilda, had long been dead, and he had married another lady, named Adeliza, daughter of the Duke de Louvain. She was a very beautiful and accomplished woman, and a great patroness of literature, so much so, that the poets of the day were proud to address their verses to her; and one of them dedicated a book about animals to the "Bel Alice," as she was called. She had no children by King Henry, but brought as much comfort to his sad heart as any one could do; and when *he* died, which was in the sixty-seventh year of his age, she married one of his most faithful followers, William de Albini, Earl of Arundel. King Henry reigned thirty-five years.

* * * * *

After the death of Harry Beauclerc, there was a time of great trouble in England.

All his children had died during his lifetime excepting his daughter Matilda, who was married, and she having a little son called Henry, after his grandfather, it was to be supposed that this child would be one day King of England.

And so he was, and we shall hear much of him as Henry the Second; but before *that* time came, the barons, who had been growing more and more powerful during the last reign, took it into their heads to choose a king for themselves, who, as he owed his crown to *them*, would, they thought, in return be more likely to allow them to act as they pleased.

For I must now tell you, that the last King

Henry had tried to check these barons much more than they liked. They were very willing to swear allegiance to him ; but it was only on condition they might rule exactly as they pleased over the people below them.

And as they often exercised a power over these *vassals* (as they were called) which was not according to law, a natural strife began between the power of the law and the power of the great men of the realm ; and it was found impossible to preserve peace and justice in the country, unless the *law* were to be maintained.

And there was also another great and powerful party which began to be too strong for the law, as it stood, to keep it in check for the good of the whole country ; and this was the party of the clergy.

While the barons were so powerful, indeed, it was not amiss that there should be this party opposed to them, or else the whole kingdom would certainly have fallen into their hands. But still it was impossible that a people should be well governed while there were so many who did not choose to submit to laws which were made for the good of all.

That you may see how it was with the clergy, I will tell you that they had not only gained from the kings of England the liberty of not paying taxes ; but also of being tried and judged when accused of any crime, not by a jury of Englishmen, but by a council of clergymen only.

And it was said, that, about this time, more than an hundred murders were committed by

clergymen, which were not punished in any way, because the offenders were not tried by the law of the land, but only by the clergy themselves, who did not like to sentence one of their own body to be punished.

In short, the clergy had still more power than the barons, for *they* also had rich lands, and dwellings, and followers, and all these privileges besides: and the common people of England were often in double terror from them, because the clergy had likewise the terrible power of *excommunication*: which meant, in those days, forbidding a person to come to mass, or take the sacraments, and forbidding other people to do him the common offices of kindness; and also adjudging him, in the hearing of the Church, to be worthy of eternal death, so long as the sentence of excommunication was not taken off him.

And yet I do not mean to say that the clergy were for the most part tyrannical or cruel over the common people, unless when they happened to oppose themselves particularly to their wishes, and then their power was tremendous; but in general, the English looked upon them as their best friends, and always fled to them when they were persecuted by the barons.

Very often the clergy interfered and protected them, and no baron, though ever so mighty, dared to attack a person who had fled to the sanctuary of the Church.

This was the state of things at the time of Henry the First's death. The whole country was covered with strong castles, in each of which a

baron lived like the chief of a band of robbers, setting law, if he pleased, at defiance, and continually going to war with the other barons; and if they were not strong enough to attack the master, they wreaked their malice upon the man, often plundering the poor unoffending vassals.

You may think how happy those poor people were who happened to be the servants of a *good* master; but it is a happier state by far, when poor men are not left to the chances of rich men being mild or cruel, and when there is but one law for rich and poor, which all must obey.

And it is the pleasantest thing belonging to history, that we can see as we read it, how many bad and unjust laws have given place to good ones; how much misery of man's making has been made to give way to comfort and happiness; and how far better off the human race is, every hundred years, than the last.

I told you the barons had chosen themselves a king. This king was Stephen, nephew to the late King Henry, and he was a good monarch, who would in better times have served the nation well; but as he had no right to be king, the greater part of his reign was passed in contests with Matilda and her son Henry.

And several of the barons remained firmly on her side, particularly William de Albini, Earl of Arundel, who had married the late king's widow, and sometimes Matilda prevailed, sometimes Stephen.

But at length it was settled that Stephen should remain on the throne for his life, but

that then Henry should succeed him. Nor was it long before this event took place, Stephen dying in 1160; after about twenty-five years of trouble to the nation, and small enjoyment either to himself or to Matilda, whom he had so long opposed.

Before we can say any thing of Henry the Second's reign, I must tell you that the fashions in dress underwent some little alteration during the fifty years before it. The Normans no longer cropped their hair as in the time of the Conqueror, but wore it ridiculously long; and this fashion was very displeasing to the clergy, so much so, that one of them preached a sermon against it, which was so eloquent that the people were all in tears, and the clergyman, taking advantage of his opportunity, whipped a pair of scissors out of his long large sleeves, and cropped the whole congregation.

Then there was another very absurd fashion. The fine courtiers took it into their heads to wear peaked toed shoes, the points of which were stuffed with tow, and twisted round like a ram's horn.

The mantles that were now worn were of very fine cloth, and lined with rich furs. We are told of one mantle worn by Henry the First, which was lined with sables, and cost £100. But when we talk



Costume of the Eleventh Century.

of money in those days, we must remember how much further it went then than now.

To make *this* clearer, it is certain that a silver penny in Henry the First's time would have purchased as large a quantity of provisions as five shillings will in our own time. So that a pound then and a pound now were of very different value: that is, the pound in those times would purchase five times as much food as the same sum in our own.

Henry the First *coined a great deal* of silver in the course of his reign, and had several mints, where the metal was melted and stamped.

But it was all, I believe, silver money; very little gold was coined till the reign of Edward the Third, which was two hundred and twenty-eight years later, and no copper till very long after that.

HENRY II.

And now came Henry the Second to the throne of England.

Do you wish to know what he saw, on looking round his kingdom? You may then pay a visit to three different sets of people.

Let us go the Abbey or Monastery.

You will find that the religious houses are sometimes called monasteries, and sometimes convents.

The difference between a monastery and a convent was, that a MONASTERY was inhabited by *monks*, solitary men who lived in separate cells;

and though they lived under one house, they only in general met at meal-times and at their devotions.

But CONVENTS were societies of *friars*, or brothers, who withdrew from the world at large, but lived together in fellowship, a society of united brethren: there were none of them in England till several years after Henry the Second's death.

ABBEYS and PRIORIES were the largest and wealthiest *monasteries*, the heads of which were called *abbots* or *priors*, and sat in the upper house of parliament, on the same footing as the barons of the realm.

The bishops were a degree higher than the abbots, wearing mitres of pure gold: the abbots did not at first wear mitres at all, but when they obtained leave to do so, they were directed to be made of silver, gilt, in order to distinguish them from those of the bishops.



Bishops' Caps.

The abbot led a life of great state in his monastery; he was regarded as the father and lord of his house, and no appeal was allowed from his decision.

He was empowered to shut up any untractable monks, for any length of time in solitary rooms

or prisons, and to inflict severe bodily punishment upon them.

The abbots and bishops had many of them schools belonging to the monasteries, where the youth were taught: they distributed provisions and medicines to the poor, and were always ready to receive travellers. The young monks were taught to write beautifully, and thus it was that many books were preserved, which otherwise would have perished before the invention of printing.

The abbey or monasteries were generally built on very pleasant spots of ground, near a river, if possible, for the convenience of fishing; and their gardens were the best then known. They cultivated fruits of all kinds, vines in large quantities, and wine was made from the vineyards of England, equal in quality to foreign wine.

Now let us visit the baron in his castle.

Had you lived at that time, you would have found the castles indeed very large, but so much space taken up with fortifications that there was little room for comforts. The great men were shut in between walls of immense thickness, constructed for strength, but not for convenience; for they had not often more than one or two rooms on a floor; and the soldiers who lived below their lord were crowded together and slept on trusses of straw.

The rooms were badly lighted, except the state rooms, which had a good window or two; few had any other light than what came through chinks or loop-holes in the walls.

They were very comfortless: floors roughly planked above, and covered with rushes only; huge massy tables, and coarse benches and settles. Noble fires, however, blazed in the great chimneys, and the tables were loaded with meat at morning, noon, and night; but the common provision of the soldiers was coarse though plentiful.

There were not till long afterwards any nicely cultivated gardens or pleasure-grounds belonging to the castles; all seemed made for soldiers and horses. Ladies, indeed, lived there with their lords, and used to go out with them, hunting and hawking; and when the castle was attacked by an enemy and the baron was absent, the lady often defended it as valiantly as he. There was always, at least, one moat, with a drawbridge over it, surrounding the castle; but sometimes there were two moats or ditches, an outer and an inner, so that if one was taken there was still another to come.

And now for *the people*.

If you had visited the *towns* in those days, you would have seen many marks of improvement. Many of them now possessed royal charters: that is, the king had conferred upon the townsmen such privileges as, for instance, the liberty of giving away their daughters in marriage, as they pleased, without asking the consent of their lord or baron; or such as the liberty of leaving their property to their children when they died.

Again, you would find some new towns rising up in the country, near the dwelling of a great

lord; and if you enquired, you would find that this great lord had, in order to encourage traders to settle near him, given them exemption from all payment of taxes and tolls; or perhaps if each trader paid a halfpenny a year to the lord, no further burden was imposed upon him.

But then, when it was only a baron who granted the charter, it was most frequently but for his life; whereas, what was given by the king was in general given for ever. And now you would find if you went into many a thriving town of England, that the townsmen had the liberty of making by-laws for their own government, and building walls for their own defence, and choosing magistrates and a council of their own; and in return for this, that they paid an annual tax in money to the king.

If you visited these towns, you would find the inhabitants busied in woollen manufactures, and dying and dressing of cloth. You would see foreign merchants, German and Flemish, importing goods and the precious metals. You would find churches rising, far superior to any that had before been known in England.

But if you went into the country and visited the hovels of the poor, you would see but little improvement. There the poor bondsmen, who belonged to the estate, might be bought or sold at the pleasure of their masters; perhaps they had a little piece of land belonging to their cottage, which they might cultivate if their lord allowed them time, not else.

But they seemed born only to do his pleasure,

and they were not allowed to marry, or dispose of their children in marriage, without his consent.

And now we must remember that Henry the Second could not see things as we see them : for he had been brought up in the notions of *his* time, not of ours ; and we can easily imagine that he must have felt extremely surprised and alarmed, when all on a sudden he found himself fighting with the whole power of the Church.

And this really happened, when he only intended to conquer the obstinacy of one man, and *that* man was

THOMAS A BECKET.

Thomas a Becket was the son of a citizen of London, and of a Syrian woman. He was educated in the schools of London, and for some time was known to King Henry only as a clever, active young man, who loved pleasure, and was useful in business, and who would be ready to do any thing the king pleased.

The king was very desirous of having an Archbishop of Canterbury, who would be willing to cut off some of those great privileges of the clergy which we have mentioned as so dangerous.

And when this high office became vacant, Henry thought he could not do better than give it to Becket.

But he did not know the man. Becket was no sooner made archbishop, than he left off all his gay and splendid habits ; he seemed to have left off also all disposition to please his royal master,

and to desire nothing but to promote the power of the Church.

At the same time he took very great pains to please the people; washing the feet of the poor, and ministering to the sick.

A clergyman had committed a very shocking crime, and the king insisted upon it that he should be tried by the magistrate. But Becket stiffly opposed it, as contrary to the usages of the Church.

Then the king called a great council of the nobility and clergy, and begged they would assist him in changing this custom, and passing some laws which should render clergymen liable to be tried for wrong-doing in the same manner as other men.

After some consideration these laws were all subscribed to by the bishops and nobles; Becket, himself, at length agreeing to do as the rest did.

But in this he was certainly either hasty or insincere; for the Pope of Rome, not choosing to agree to these laws, Becket immediately altered his mind concerning them; and putting on his episcopal robes, and bearing the crosier in his hand, he went to the king's palace, and marching straight into the room where Henry and his barons were assembled, he protested against the new laws, and revoked his late assent to them.

This conduct astonished and irritated the king, who now bitterly repented having put him into such a station; and what was Henry's indig-



Becket before Henry II.

nation, when a few days afterwards, he found that Becket was gone over to the pope, and when there soon came a sentence of excommunication against his chief ministers, and all whom Becket considered as particularly his enemies.

It would take much time to relate all that passed from this time between the king and Becket. Both were wrong, and both in some points were right. But the king gradually became more and more exasperated against Becket, while Becket himself could not, or did not choose to yield in the least to the king, but rather seemed to take pride in contradicting him.

They were, however, at length, outwardly reconciled, and had a meeting, at which the king forgave the archbishop, and the archbishop gave his blessing to the king, and Becket after this went over again to England.

But the way in which he conducted himself on

his return provoked Henry more than ever. Instead of quietly going to discharge the duties of a Christian bishop in his diocese, he made a journey through Kent with all the splendour and state of a sovereign, and proceeding towards London, he excommunicated the Bishops of London and Salisbury, and suspended the Archbishop of York.

He also excommunicated one man for having spoken against him, and another for having cut off the tail of one of his horses.

At this time King Henry was in Normandy; and when he heard of Becket's behaviour, and when the bishops whom he had denounced came over to complain of his treatment of them, his anger passed all prudent bounds, and he hastily exclaimed, "And have I then no true friends among the cowards who eat my bread? not one who will rid me of this turbulent priest?"

His words were heard; and though no one dared to make answer, there were those in his presence who inferred that the king would be glad Becket were murdered. There is no reason at all to believe that Henry had any such idea.

He was doubtless quite bewildered at the difficulty of dealing with this man, and we may take his words as only expressing his wish that any one would devise a way by which he could get the better of him.

However, four of the king's knights, building upon his words, set out directly for Canterbury, with the full purpose of murdering the arch-
bishop.

And they executed this bad purpose but too soon. Their appearance in the town had occasioned some conjecture, and the archbishop was advised to keep within.

But he refused, and went as usual to attend vespers at the cathedral. He was just ascending the steps of the choir when the four knights, with twelve companions, all armed, burst into the church, exclaiming loudly, "Where is the archbishop? where is the traitor?"

"Here is the archbishop," answered Becket, looking loftily on them, "but he is no traitor." At that moment the knights fell upon him, and knocking him down with repeated blows, he expired at the foot of St. Bennet's altar.



Death of Becket.

Thus died Thomas a Becket; and his death, besides being an act of murder and sacrilege, was productive of very unhappy consequences

to both the king and the people. The clergy threw all the blame of Becket's death upon Henry, and the people believing them, were thenceforth less inclined to think favourably of any thing the king could do for them.

The next thing that was to be done, was to rank Becket with the saints and martyrs, and to build a sumptuous shrine in Canterbury Cathedral to his memory: and it was reported that wonderful cures were wrought there; that even dead men were brought to life by touching the sacred tomb.

And for three or four hundred years after, troops of pilgrims constantly resorted to the tomb of St. Thomas, kneeling and making confession of their sins, and appealing to him for help, as if he was their intercessor with God.

Richer people brought with them gifts, which they offered up at the shrine, and which amounted to a very large sum in the course of a year; in one year as much as eight hundred and thirty-two pounds, and in another as much as nine hundred and fifty-four.

The shrine of Thomas a Becket is still standing in his cathedral; but the time for pilgrims to kneel and pray and offer gifts there, is gone by; and those who go now, may well be thankful that it is so; for now they have the clear language of the Bible to guide them, and they know that "there is but one Mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus."

And no monks stand about the shrine now, persuading the people to believe in miracles said

to have been performed there; but the beautiful building remains, and every one who goes may still lift up his heart in silence to God, and pray to be cured of his infirmities: and where is *He* who does not believe that those prayers, if offered in faith, will be heard?

HENRY II., CONTINUED.


When Becket was gone, it may be supposed that King Henry had greater peace in his kingdom. But this was not so. His life was one long struggle with the barons and the Church, and with his own family.

He had succeeded in demolishing some of the castles, and had given some privileges to the poorer people; so that they were better off now than they had been before since the Conquest.

But the manner of Becket's death raised so many enemies against him, that he was obliged entirely to give up any attempt to make new laws for the clergy; and, consequently, they remained even more powerful at the close of his reign than at the beginning.

And in his family his sorrows were many, and not undeserved, since he had chosen to take for his queen a woman of very bad character, merely for ambition's sake; and then, when he found himself unhappy, he sought the company of other women.

Among others, there was one very beautiful girl called Rosamond, whom King Henry loved ex-



tremely, and, because he dreaded lest the queen should ill treat her if she found out his attachment, he concealed her in a labyrinth in Woodstock Park.

And, as stories say, the queen after some time discovered the secret of this labyrinth, and found her way quite into Fair Rosamond's presence; and, when there, this cruel queen held out a bowl of poison to Rosamond, and obliged her to drink it, while she held a dagger to her breast.

But if she hoped, when her rival was gone, that King Henry would love her better, she was very much mistaken, since he could not but hate her cruelty, and mourn for poor Rosamond. Besides this, the queen made him miserable by her bad temper, and by constantly leading his sons to quarrel with him and with one another.

It does not appear that the king's sons had any good reason for complaint against their father; on the contrary, he had done every thing possible to secure a peaceful succession to the throne for them.

He had, in particular, caused his eldest son, Henry, to be crowned king in his lifetime, in order that all the barons and clergy might swear allegiance to him; and he had assigned portions of his inheritance to his other sons.

But they would not wait for his death, but complained that they were not put into direct possession of power; and the three eldest, Henry, Richard, and Geoffrey, escaped from England, and went abroad to raise an army with which to attack their old father.

It is said, that one reason why these young men complained of their father, was, that he would not allow them the sports usual to their age, and was very severe in punishing any free and riotous conduct even among those nearest to him at court.

And, indeed, it is true that King Henry did not make himself popular by encouraging the martial sports which the nobles so much loved.

The *Tournament* and the *Just* were among the most popular of these amusements. In the tournament a number of knights met in a certain space of ground, according to fixed regulations made on the spot, and dared each other to combat either on horseback or on foot, but generally on horseback; and as they fought very ardently, it often happened that what was begun in sport ended in earnest, and very serious wounds were given and taken on both sides.

Justs were a sort of sportive tournament, only undertaken for pastime, and the combatants used spears without the usual heads. The art of the game was for one combatant to strike another on the front of his helmet with the spear, with force enough to drive him down backward from his horse.

The combatants came at full speed from different sides of the course; and when they met in the middle, the clash of their armour and the noise of the spears was tremendous.

To see these diversions, all the lords and ladies in the neighbourhood used eagerly to assemble together. Temporary galleries were erected

l the field of com-
music sounded;
all were dressed
e most sumptu-
ashion of the day.

was Henry the
id's opinion, how-
that these sports
injurious to the
e, and tended to

up the warlike
of the barons,
he wanted to re-
; and he entirely
le them during
sign; by which
s he perhaps did
lf injury.

on after his three
ad left England,
have mentioned,
discovered that
queen was also
ng on a conspi-
gainst him; and
ing vainly look-
ound among his
t relations for
true friend or
ellor.

n, when his heart
pierced with grief, it came strongly to his
that he had certainly been the occasion of



Two Knights Jousting.

Becket's death, though he might not have deliberately intended it; and there were those about him who told him he would never be prosperous again, until he had made his peace with Heaven, and done penance at the shrine at Canterbury.

The poor king was too sad and distressed to oppose their arguments, and, humbling himself, he went to Canterbury. As the beautiful cathedral rose in sight, he alighted from his horse, and took off his shoes, after the fashion of pilgrims, performing the rest of the journey barefoot.

And when he reached the shrine, he cast himself on the bare pavement near the tomb, and expressed his willingness to suffer any punishment the monks might impose upon him: and it is enough to rouse any heart to think that these creatures pretended to take his punishment and forgiveness both into their own hands; and, first scourging him as he lay on the ground, afterwards absolved him in God's holy name.

Nor was he much the happier after this act of humiliation; for still his sons' ingratitude lay heavy at his heart. The worst pang, however, was yet to come. His youngest son, John, though even more treacherous and artful than the rest, was his favourite.

He, at least, the king thought, would be faithful to him; and, in the hope of this, he was comforted under the death of his eldest son, Prince Henry. But now, it was suddenly made known to him, that this very John was one in a conspiracy against him.

The miserable father cursed his children in the

ness of his heart, and could never prevail
himself to unsay the terrible words which he
ed on this occasion. A lingering fever
ned upon him. Every thing looked dark
nd him. It was plain there were no more
it days in store for King Henry. He fell
at Chinon, in Normandy, and finding his end
oach, begged to be carried into the church,
e the altar, where he expired, A. D. 1189.

END OF PART I.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

▲

ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART II.

LONDON :

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND SON,

65, Paternoster-Row ;

AND AT WELLINGTON, SALOP.

1838.

1

ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

RICHARD I. 1189—1199.

YOU will not expect to hear much that is good of this king, after his rebellious conduct to his father; and yet he had his virtues, and the people of England were extremely proud of him, because of his courage and success in the Holy Wars, and because he was popular in his manners towards them.

They called him *Cœur de Lion*, which is French for Heart of Lion; likening him, thus, to the fierce but generous king of the forest.

Even before his father died, he was bent upon joining the crusaders in the Holy War; and so full was his heart of ambition to be at the head of all that was done, that he could not bear the idea of his father's going, for fear he should thus be robbed of the glory.

It is said, that it was more for the purpose of preventing King Henry's undertaking this expedition than any thing else, that his son quar-

reled with him during his later years: if it were so, it makes Richard's conduct still worse.

However that be, no sooner was the old man dead, than Richard prepared a grand armament for the Holy Land; and as these Holy Wars were favourite objects with the clergy, Richard became their darling hero, and they spared no pains to raise supplies of money for him.

The people too, who, for the most part, loved the church, and were chiefly governed by its authority, were pleased at the idea of the great work their king was likely to achieve; and when they saw him at the head of his barons and knights, clad in their ponderous armour, with their banners flying before them, and proudly managing their spirited steeds, they expected great things from such noble looking warriors.

It was long however before any news came from King Richard; for in those days there were no swift sailing vessels, or any expeditious modes of conveyance.

But in time the people heard, as they expected, that no one of all the kings and great men in the Holy Land was so highly thought of as Cœur de Lion, and that he was making great progress in arms.

Afterwards news came that he had fallen sick of a fever. Then again that he was better, but that quarrels had taken place between himself and Philip the King of France, and also Leopold Duke of Austria.

Again they heard that Philip of France, and the Duke of Austria, being, it was supposed,

tired of giving way in every thing to the lion-hearted king, who certainly lorded it over them, had returned home, and left him to fight almost by himself.

The next report said he prospered all the better for this, and was come up quite to Jerusalem, after several victories. But again they heard that King Richard was obliged to give up the Conquest of the Holy City, just as it seemed to be in his grasp: for that, on reviewing his army, he found it so wasted by sickness and desertion, that a longer stay would be certain ruin; that, therefore, he had concluded a treaty with the enemy, and was about to return.

To see their lion-hearted king again, was a joyful hope to many a man and woman in England; but it was not so to every one. John, the king's brother, had remained at home all this while, and, for some time past, had been secretly trying to supplant King Richard, having gained over some few nobles and clergymen to his side.

And as Richard's return was the last thing they wished for, you may suppose they were not displeased when messengers came, informing them of his sad disasters. For it had so happened, that the Duke of Austria, who had often been affronted by Richard when they were in the Holy Land together, managed to get him into his power as he was returning to England with only a few attendants, and put him into a prison.

It was some time before the people of England knew what was become of their king, and at length, when it was found out that he was in

prison, the duke refused to let him go unless a large sum of money were paid down for his ransom, thereby obliging the king to lie still in confinement until word could be sent to England of his requirements.

But the people of England did not mind parting with their money, if they could but get back their king; and in a very short time a sum amounting to three hundred thousand pounds of our money was collected and sent over to the Duke of Austria, who was then obliged to let King Richard go.

And the moment the king was at liberty, he set out as fast as he possibly could, and travelled day and night till he came to the sea-side, where he met with a vessel and embarked directly for England.

This was all as it should have been, for the treacherous duke repented of having let him go, and sent men in pursuit of him; but, happily, they only arrived in time to see his little vessel at a distance making all sail for England.

The best part of Richard's conduct remains to be told. When he reached England, he learned all that had passed in his absence, and particularly his brother John's conduct, which at first made him very angry. But when John humbled himself and submitted, he forgave him freely, only saying, "I wish I could as easily forget your offences, as you will my pardon."

From this time John served him better. Richard's reign, however, was not long. He was too turbulent and warlike to have much rest either

for his body or mind, and he died in the year 1199 of a wound received while besieging a castle in Normandy, called Chalus.

The wound was given by a soldier, who was taken prisoner and brought before the king, and the king asked him "why he had sought to take his life?"

"Because," said the soldier, "you killed my father and brother. I have but taken a just revenge."

Richard, so far from being the more inflamed by this reply, pardoned the soldier, and ordered that a present should be given him; but after he himself was dead, his generals disobeyed his orders, and put the poor soldier to a miserable death.

You remember, I dare say, how passionately fond all the Norman kings were of hunting, and what pains they took to keep up the deer; indeed, as a very old English writer says, "King William loved the fat deer as if he had been their father."

But now, in the time of the lion-hearted king, there were a set of outlaws, commanded by a captain, who was called Robin Hood, who took it into their heads to gain their livelihood in the forests, and, setting the law at defiance, live freely upon the king's game.

These outlaws amounted to upwards of a hundred men, and they were all capital bowmen, and so skilful and clever, that they for many years defied all attempts to catch them.

As to the common people, indeed, so far from *their* being enemies to Robin Hood and his crew,

there is no doubt that they secretly wished them well with all their hearts, and were always ready to give them notice of any attacks likely to be made upon them.

There is no great wonder in this, if you remember that the people could not but hate the forest-laws, and all the provisions which the Norman kings had made for the preservation of their game.

And, moreover, as many of the poor were oppressed by their lords, they were glad to look any where for a champion; and these outlaws frequently helped them in struggling with some petty vexation or other.

But one cannot deny that not only did Robin Hood and his men kill the king's deer, but that also they robbed the king's subjects.

If a rich, purse-proud abbot, or some very wealthy merchant, was known to be passing through the forests, Robin Hood was sure to have notice of it, and to be ready to waylay him, and demand a certain portion of his money.

On the contrary, if a poor distressed pilgrim went his way through Sherwood Forest, and fell in with Robin, he was certain of courteous treatment, of a hearty meal, and perhaps a handsome present to boot.

Robin Hood's archers were so skilful in the use of the bow, as to perform feats which seem to us incredible. It is even said, that both Robin and his friend Little John could shoot an arrow a measured mile.

They were all dressed in cloth of Lincoln Green,

and had their own laws and regulations. Robin was never captured or conquered; but when he was growing old, having a fit of illness upon him, it is said that he applied to to a female relation of his to be bled.

Women in those times were the principal surgeons; particularly such women as were connected with the monasteries; and this relation of Robin's was a prioress.

The story goes, that finding him in her power, and high rewards being offered to any one who would bring him in dead or alive, she treacherously allowed him to bleed to death.

This is said to have been in the reign of Henry the Third, but I cannot vouch for its truth. They say he was buried under some trees, (Robin always loved trees,) and a stone with an inscription upon it placed over him.

The story of Robin Hood and many of his adventures have been repeated in English ballads almost from the time of his decease; and it is very remarkable that the lower people made a great festival in his honour every May-day, which was called Robin Hood's Day.

On these occasions they used to go into the woods and fields dressed in green, and set up May-poles. A man dressed like Robin Hood was Lord of the May, and a woman, or perhaps a man dressed like a woman, was called Maid Marian.

These games were favourites with the people for some hundred years after Robin's time; and we hear of Henry the Eighth and his queen and

court going out to Shooter's Hill, a Maying, on Robin Hood's Day.

JOHN LACKLAND, 1199—1216.

One hundred and thirty years had passed from the Conquest of England. In the space of that time, besides those particular charters which many individuals and many towns obtained from the Norman kings, the people at large had several times had charters granted them, confirming certain privileges, and securing their lives, liberties, and properties.

It is very true that the barons used often to oppress their vassals; but it is true also, that though there were many *separate* tyrants among them, yet, when they met to deliberate about the good of the nation, they did not neglect the *common people's* good.

On the contrary, they were always desirous of guarding them from new and arbitrary laws, and often stood between them and the king to very good purpose.

They saw plainly that their kings would rather



King John.



Two Norman Barons.

have ruled without them altogether; but this was not according to law or custom, and they thought themselves justified in demanding a pledge from their different monarchs, that the kingdom should be governed by the same counsels, and that the lords and commons should have the same *certain* privileges with one king, as they had with the last.

I tell you this before-hand, because in the reign of King John, a most famous charter, called the Great Charter, was gained by the barons from the king; and it may be said, that from this time the people of England had something to trust to.

Though many imperfections in their laws re-

mained, they were not from this time liable to be governed by the caprice of one man; and the caprice of their own lords, the barons, were by common consent made to give way in several cases to general law.

King John was, as you know, the brother of the lion-hearted Richard. There was another elder brother named Geoffrey, but he had long been dead; yet he had left one son called Arthur, who was just twelve years old when his uncle Richard died. He was, indeed, heir to the crown in preference to John, and had been destined to reign after him, at one time, by Richard; but, in the last years of his life, John had been named as the successor.

And as John was a man and Arthur a child, and as the uncle managed to get the nephew into his possession after a battle fought in France in his behalf, this young prince had but a poor chance; and indeed, very soon after the battle, he disappeared, and it was never very clearly known what became of him.

Some said his uncle murdered him; but it is at all times easy to spread a bad report, and often difficult to prove its falsehood; and I do not think there is sufficient proof of John's guilt in this case, though he was far from being a good man.

You will recollect that our kings of England were all dukes of Normandy, also, from the time of William the Conqueror till John's time. But he, by his bad management and sloth, gave the King of France an opportunity of seizing by far

|

the greatest part of Normandy; and thus he got the name of *Lack-land*.

In another way, he gained himself great shame. He had a quarrel with the Pope, and after provoking this contest, at first, in a very foolish manner, he humbled himself so far as to take off his crown and lay it at the foot of a person whom the Pope had sent over to receive his submission, and he signed a parchment, by which he gave over his whole kingdom to the Pope, and promised henceforth to hold it only as his vassal.

This greatly provoked the barons, and also the bishops and the clergy, who though papists, of course, yet were lovers of their country, and did not choose to have it put into the power of any foreign potentate; and the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Lord Fitzwalter, and a great number of barons, met together, first at Bury St. Edmunds, and then at Stamford, to deliberate what they should do.

The Pope's legate (as the officer who came over was called) meantime worked on, without paying any regard to the English bishops; filling up vacancies in the Church in his master's name, without asking their assent.

The barons and bishops soon saw that the king would not obey the laws of the realm, unless he found them very resolute; and they sent up a strong petition that he would sign the charter which they put before him.

At Easter they assembled again as the king had appointed, but he refused to sign the charter; however, finding them very strong and unani-

mous, another conference was appointed at Runnymede, a meadow between Staines and Windsor.

There a long discussion took place, and at length it ended in the king's signing the Great Charter.



King John signing Magna Carta.

It provided with great wisdom and foresight for the liberties of all classes of subjects, and it was not by any means injurious to the interests of the king. Indeed, when we think of the *time* in which it was framed, by rough, armed barons, warring against a tyrannical king, we cannot enough admire its just and temperate spirit.

This Great Charter was signed on the fifteenth of June, 1215.

After this time King John did nothing very worthy of notice. He was a cruel, violent wretch, and some of his actions look more like those of a madman than of a rational person; and yet in

his reign the great blessing of Magna Charta was obtained, and some of the cities, London in particular, were indebted to him for much of their prosperity.

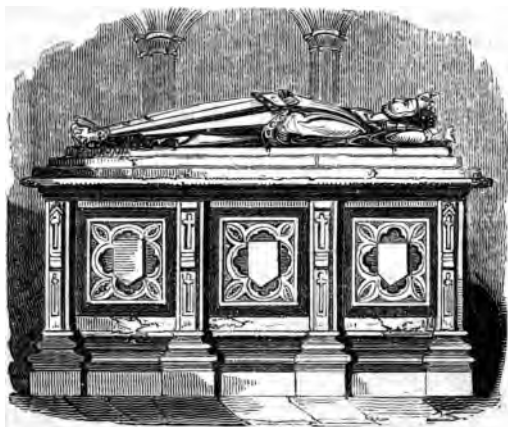
London Bridge, which was the first bridge built with *stone* over the River Thames, and which had been begun by Peter of Colechurch in Henry the Second's reign, was finished about the middle of John's.



London Bridge.

But only four years afterwards this bridge was burned.

King John died in 1216: his tomb is in Worcester Cathedral.



King John's Tomb in Worcester Cathedral.

HENRY III. 1216—1272.

Henry the Third was the son of King John, and was only nine years old when his father died. He had a wise guardian and counsellor in the Earl of Pembroke; but when he came to man's estate he cast off these better friends, and preferred weak favourites, who never knew how to advise him for the best.

Yet he did some good to his country. He had some taste for architecture, and began building some fine churches, particularly Westminster Abbey. He encouraged the study of natural

history, and rewarded the poets and romance writers.

In his reign English trade increased greatly; and though many of the warlike men of the time reproached him for being a lover of peace, yet, if he had but conducted his government at home wisely, there would have been little reason to find fault with him for this, especially as the wars of his time were the worst of all wars.

For they were crusades against a number of Christians who had ventured to think for themselves in matters of religion; and who, not finding that the Pope's authority was a scriptural one, had renounced their popish faith, and were living chiefly in the mountains of France and Switzerland.

The Pope being extremely incensed against these Christians who had renounced his authority, called upon all the great men of Christendom to assemble and undertake a crusade against them, and too many were found ready and willing to comply.

Some of our own English barons, who had so manfully conducted themselves in King John's reign, now put themselves forward to carry war and bloodshed against these poor Christians, and perhaps there never was a war more cruelly carried on.

But though they poured out the blood of these poor Christians like water, it did not extinguish their faith. On the contrary, it spread further and faster for all the cruelty of persecution.

Henry had signed the Great Charter as soon as

he was old enough to understand its meaning; but he never entered into the spirit of it, and was constantly trying to break through the barrier it imposed upon him.

He repeatedly indeed broke his promises to the barons, and they were determined on bringing him to renew them in a more solemn manner in the presence of the bishops and abbots. They therefore assembled in the greatest pomp in Westminster Hall, and the Great Charter was read.

At the end of the charter, there was a solemn sentence of excommunication against any who should break it; and, when this sentence was pronounced, all the prelates, who had burning tapers in their hands, cast them down on the ground, exclaiming, "So may all that incur this sentence be extinguished in hell;" and the king added, "So help me God, I will keep these things, as I am a man: as I am a Christian: as I am a knight: as I am a king, crowned and anointed."



Henry III. renewing the Great Charter.

It was in this reign that a parliament was summoned, comprising not only knights of the shires, but citizens and burgesses also; so that it is very plain that the people were now coming into greater consequence and reputation.

Henry the Third reigned five years: at his death, he was buried in Westminster Abbey, where a very fine monument to his memory is to be seen.

EDWARD I. 1272—1307.

- We have had kings of the name of Edward in England before the present time; but Edward, the son of Henry the Third, was the first Edward of *Norman* race; and he is always known in history by the name of Edward the First.

He reigned from the year 1272 to 1307, and was not young when he came to the crown.

I have not as yet said any thing about Scotland, Wales, or Ireland; but it is now time to do so. In this reign



King Edward I.

Wales was wholly con-

quered by the English, and the Scotch kings were made to hold *their* crowns in subjection to the English crown.

THE WELSH.

Long ago, when we began our account of the people who have at different times governed in England, we mentioned the *British*: and you heard how, after the Romans had come and gone, and after the Saxons had established themselves here, many of the remaining Britons were driven into Wales.

Wales therefore is peopled by the descendants of the oldest inhabitants of Britain; and up to the reign of Edward the First it was governed by a series of native princes and kings of its own. The last native prince's name was Llewellyn.

The English had been always very formidable neighbours to the Welsh; and frequently had behaved in a very cruel manner towards them, seeming to regard them as little better than savages.

And the Welsh, on their side, were too proud to learn such useful arts as the English could have taught them. They considered themselves as a high-born, injured race, and were apt to take offence on the most trifling occasions; nor was it easy to prevent the wildest excesses whenever their passions were roused.

There was a race of men among them who were called bards: who played fine old martial and patriotic airs on the harp, and sang songs of their

own composing "about the strength, courage, and goodness of the old Princes of Wales."

These bards by their spirited songs helped greatly to cherish in the minds of the Welsh the love of themselves and their country, so that they still remained an untameable and hostile people, and those who lived near them either were or pretended to be in fear of their attacks.

This people, then, our first Edward determined to conquer. It was a difficult task, for the Welsh well knew the nature of their own country, and took advantage of the shelter of their lofty mountains, which at that time were covered with woods, where they could lie in ambush, and attack a whole army to the greatest advantage.

And the war might have been carried on for a length of time thus, if a treacherous Welshman had not betrayed Prince Llewellyn, and brought on a battle in which he was slain.

Then the Welsh fled in confusion, or threw down their arms, or were put to the sword; for Edward, though he had many fine qualities, was a merciless conqueror: and the strife ended by his dividing the country into counties, and placing sheriffs in each, as was the custom in England, and also by Edward's calling his eldest son, who was born at Cærnarvon, Prince of Wales.

From this time the Welsh have had no more princes of their own race; but the eldest son of the King of England is always called Prince of Wales.

The bards were, of course, deeply grieved at this change in the government of their country,

and they long mourned over it in their songs; but they were obliged to be cautious where or how they uttered their sentiments, as the English were always on the watch against them, and it is said that many of them were murdered on account of their bitter and scornful remarks on the conquerors.

And King Edward cut down a great many of the woods on the mountains and in the valleys of Wales, that there might be no place of shelter for rebels.

THE SCOTCH.

Scotland had been governed in a very different manner from Wales. It had a regular succession of kings and a parliament of its own: nor was there any just pretext for bringing it into subjection to England.

It was indeed desirable to unite its people with the English as far as possible, and to maintain a family harmony between its kings; and Edward had, for this purpose, proposed a marriage between his son and the young princess of Scotland. But, before this union could take place, she died; and it so happened, that there was no one named as successor to the crown whose claims satisfied *all* the Scotch people. Some were for one, and some for another, and, in all, there were thirteen candidates for this crown.

However, among the thirteen, there were *two* who had a much better claim than the rest, and

these were named, the one, Baliol, the other, Bruce.

Now, in this state of affairs, King Edward's ambition and greediness of power were aroused; and when some of the Scotch governors applied to him to interfere and settle the matter for them, he eagerly agreed to do so; but he made it a condition that the Scotch would acknowledge *him* to be their head or supreme king, and that whoever they chose, should only be king *under him*, and take an oath of submission to him, like one of his own great barons.

The Scotch were astonished at such a demand: they considered their kings to be as independent as Edward himself, and it seemed to them a shameful thing that whoever wore their crown was to be a vassal to the King of England.*

But the two chief candidates, Baliol and Bruce, thought too little of the disgrace to Scotland, and only consulted their desire of being kings at all events, and each of them declared himself willing to consider Edward as his superior lord.

When Edward had obtained this advantage, which was all he at that moment wanted, he was satisfied, and seems to have given his best attention to the justice of the claims which Baliol and Bruce put forth; and it was finally decided that those of Baliol were to be preferred to those of Bruce.

Baliol, therefore, was crowned king, at the

* I have followed Mr. Sharon Turner's History in the account of the transactions in Scotland.

same time taking an oath of allegiance to Edward as his chief.

But it was not very long before Baliol repented of his conduct. At first he offended Edward by not obeying a summons which the English king sent him to appear and answer for himself against a complaint, preferred against him by a Scotchman; and, indeed, it must have been a very wounding thing to the Scotch king to be sent for all the way to London to answer a complaint made by one of his own subjects.

But his next and worse offence, was refusing to send King Edward any soldiers, when Edward was engaged in a war with France, and actually signing a treaty with the French king without Edward's knowledge or consent.

Nor was it only that Baliol and his parliament wished to keep aloof from the contest; they agreed to attack Edward's English dominions while he was engaged in France, and, accordingly, invaded Cumberland, laid waste the country, and besieged Carlisle. And Baliol also sent Edward a paper, renouncing his homage.

Edward, a stern and severe monarch, was extremely indignant at this conduct, and now determined, not merely to reign as the superior, but as the *sole* lord in Scotland.

His army was one of the best disciplined in the world; and it was not long before he conquered the Scots in a pitched battle, and took Baliol prisoner. Then he sent him up to the Tower in London, and also took the great stone, upon which the kings of Scotland always sat

when they were crowned, and sent it to Westminster; and this stone was framed, and is now the Coronation Chair in Westminster Abbey.



Coronation Chair.

Edward put English governors into the chief castles in Scotland, and appointed an Englishman to be at the head of the general government; leaving also a number of soldiers to keep the people in awe,—a state of things which occasioned the deepest indignation and sorrow to all good Scotchmen.

Then there arose in Scotland a hero whose generous and brave deeds made him beloved by his countrymen, who laboured for a time, with success, to free them from the English yoke: and this hero was William Wallace.

He gathered his countrymen together; he drove out Edward's governors; he got possession of the principal towns: and it was seven years before the King of England succeeded in conquering this brave man, and regaining possession of Scotland.

But Wallace himself was at length betrayed into the hands of Edward by a false friend, and the king, who only saw in him an enemy, and felt no respect for his devoted exertions for his country, treated him like a common malefactor, sent him up to London, where he was hung, and his head afterwards exposed on London Bridge.

But though Edward appeared thus to have conquered his chief enemies in Scotland, the spirit of the people was not broken; and during the whole of the rest of his life, he was kept in employment by them. If I were to tell you their wonderful struggles, their bravery, and perseverance and sufferings, I should take up a long time, and it would be Scotch History rather than English.

I will not therefore dwell upon it further than to say that, after these long and severe struggles, the Scotch were at last rewarded by gaining their independence, and that they preserved it until, many years afterwards, the two countries were united under our King James the First, who was by birth King of the Scots.

THE IRISH.

I have also omitted any notice of Ireland till this time. Ireland, though an independent island

conquered by the English, was so near, that English kings found themselves greatly annoyed whenever they were at war with foreigners, by the interference of some of its chiefs, many of whom were ready to give help to enemies of England.

During the Saxon times, and indeed before it is said that the Irish were more civilized than the English: they certainly had many learned among them at a very early period, and received Christianity about the middle of the sixth century.

It was in the year 1169, that King Henry the Second determined on conquering this neighbourhood. He sent over armies, and at last went himself in 1172, and was so far successful, as that the princes of Ireland, except one, submitted to him: and he kept a court and held a parliament in Dublin. He then settled some English soldiers and merchants there; and he gave portions of land and Irish titles to some of his followers; and he called his son John (Lackland) King of Ireland.

The Irish liked the English no better than the Danes and Scotch had done, and were constantly rebelling; and when the Scotch had been successful for a time in their attempts to shake off the yoke of Edward the First, they joined themselves to the discontented Irish also.

I should have the same difficulty in telling you of all the different contests between Irish and English, as between Scotch and English; so that I will content myself with saying that there was

a constant succession of fresh insurrections and fresh conquests in Ireland for many of the following reigns; that the Irish were very hardly treated, and that the English have deservedly suffered a great deal from their usurpation over them.

What you have heard of Edward the First has not been much to his credit; and yet he had some very good points in his character: an excellent son, a good master, and a faithful friend; not given to ostentation, but very simple in his dress and appearance. He attached his relations and friends strongly to him, though so stern to his enemies.

As a father, however, he was not happy. He spoiled his eldest boy, allowing him in too much indulgence and luxury; and this weak and unfortunate man, who was called Edward the Second, and sometimes Edward of Cærnarvon, (because he was born at Cærnarvon Castle,) led a very unhappy life, and came to a miserable death in the year 1328.

Edward the First was buried in Westminster Abbey; but his son's tomb is in Gloucester Cathedral.

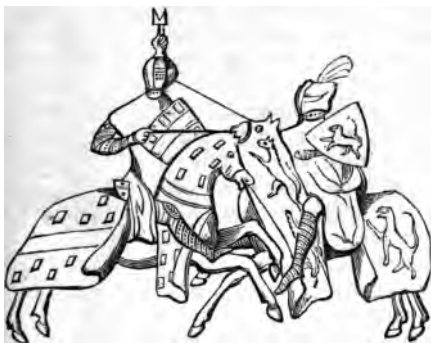
Those fine cathedrals which we still admire and truly think the glory of our country, many of them built *after* this time; but several were now in existence; Norwich, Worcester, Gloucester, Winchester, Westminster Abbey, standing.

And there were many beautiful abbeys which are now only ruins; such as Tintern Abbey in South Wales, and Fountains Abbey in Yorkshire.

and Waverley Abbey in Surrey, and the Abbey at Ely St. Edmunds in Suffolk; all these are now roofless and ruined, but the fine arched or pointed windows still remain, and the ivy covered walls, and the pillars, shewing how beautiful the buildings must have been when in their better days.

Our dwelling-houses indeed are far more convenient than theirs were; but we shall probably never see reared again such grand and splendid piles of building as our old cathedrals.

The dress of the knights when they went to battle was very striking; their helmets were of various shape, called the barrel-shape; and the



Helmets.

knights now carried *pen-nons* on their lances, which were small flags with the device and arms of the knight emblazoned on them.

As to the ladies, their dresses were not very becoming; they mostly wore something round their throats and over their chins which was called a *gorget*, and it was a frightful disguise, being wrapped two or three times round the neck, and then fastened with pins on each side up to the ears.

"I have often thought," said one of the writers of the day, "when I have seen a lady so closely tied up, that her neck-cloth was nailed to her chin, or that the pins were hooked into her flesh."

This is a picture of one of these ladies.

Others were a little better.

They wore an immense number of jewels, gold buckles, earrings, &c. and sometimes girdles of beaten gold, ornamented with emeralds and rubies.



Pennons.



Ladies' C

*Ladies' Costume.*

They had the bad fashion of tight lacing, and took pains to acquire great slimness of figure. In the next reign, (that of Edward the Third,) their dress was certainly prettier and more simple; and the knights at that time began to wear plate-armour, which covered their limbs and bodies, but was not so heavy as the full-mail they used to wear.

*Blanche de la Tour,
Edward the Third's Daughter.*

EDWARD III. 1327—1377.

There are many people who think this was the most glorious reign of any in English History,

because of the great victories gained by King Edward in France.

But I cannot agree with them: though Providence overruled the events of this reign for the production of good, I cannot praise the King of England, who, for the sake of being King of France also, could carry on a murderous war for many years, raising supplies of money from his poor subjects merely to gratify his own ambition.

But when we look back on these times, we must always remember that kings and nobles were educated to war. The glory of the day was to be a true knight and a brave soldier.

Edward the Third early caught this spirit, and it was encouraged by every one around him. Though the people in the end might suffer from his exactions, they were not yet aware of the evil and folly of indulging a warlike spirit. They loved to see tournaments and jousts; and to know that their king and his valiant son were esteemed among the noblest of the knights of their time, was enough to make them forget the burdens entailed on them.

In this French war many very remarkable things occurred. Among others, I must mention that after a great victory which Edward the Third gained in France, he laid siege to Calais, a town on the French coast, opposite to Dover in Kent, and the nearest place to England of any in France.

It was important to Edward to gain this place, and he was therefore the more angry to find the governor would not by any means allow him to come into the town.

On the contrary, he made every preparation to hold out against Edward, and sent away seventeen hundred of the poorest of the people who would do them no good, but only eat up their provisions; and then he drew up the drawbridge which led into the town, and shut himself in with his soldiers to guard the place.

When Edward saw these poor people turned out, he did not fall upon them with his army, as he easily might; but he gave them all a hearty dinner and two pieces of money each, and then let them go.

Then he proceeded to build a little town of wooden houses round Calais, that his army might be comfortable, and that he might prevent the French from sending any provisions into the place, and he himself sent for food and money from England.

The French king, Philip, was much concerned at the state of his governor and soldiers in Calais. He tried by every possible means to send them some provisions, for he knew they must be almost starved, and several times his banners were seen so near the city, that the poor people hoped assistance was really coming.

But Edward guarded all the approaches so closely that there was no escaping his vigilance, and the citizens of Calais had the grief of seeing their friends obliged to retire. Then they began to despair, and sent a messenger to King Edward, offering to give up Calais, if he would spare their lives, and allow them an honourable retreat.

Edward, however, was by this time so enraged

at their long resistance, that he told them their submission came too late,—that they must now prepare themselves to suffer whatever his soldiers pleased when they were let into the town.

All his generals and ministers entreated him not to allow the citizens and those who had committed no fault to be put to slaughter; and, after much persuasion, the king agreed that if six of the principal men in the city would come out ready to suffer death, he would forgive the rest.

When this message was carried back to Calais, every one looked at his neighbour, and each wondered in his heart who the six citizens that were to die instead of the rest would be. No one liked to fix upon them, and yet none wished to give up his own life.

But, among them, there was one rich and generous man, named Eustace St. Pierre, and he, stepping forth, nobly said, “My friends, I will be the first to offer myself to die for the rest:” and as soon as he had said this, some others made a like offer, and the number of six was speedily made up.

Then these generous men come out as Edward had desired, with their heads and feet bare, with the keys of the town in their hands, and with halters round their necks, ready to be hung; and as soon as they had laid the keys at Edward's feet, he ordered them to be hung.

The king's general, Sir Walter Manny, grieved at his master's cruelty, and begged and prayed him not to sully his victory by such an act. But Edward turned away, refusing to hear him, till

happily his queen Philippa, who was in the camp hearing what was passing, came forward, and fell at his feet, weeping and praying him to spare the lives of these men.

Edward allowed her to speak for some time before he made any answer, but at length, he could hold out no longer, and said to her, "I give them to you—do as you please with them."

Then the queen took them to her own tent, and gave them entertainment,—loading them with presents, and finally sending them back to their friends in safety.

Philip, King of France, died in the midst of these contests, and his son John succeeded. This made no difference in the war, which was carried on by King Edward's son, the Black Prince, who was one of the most celebrated men of the time. He was brave in war, but the most polite and gentle knight possible when the contest was over. In one great battle which he fought in France he took King John prisoner.

As soon as the Black Prince heard that he was taken, he took off his helmet, ordered a tent to be pitched on the spot, and desired that the captive king might be brought in.

When he entered, the prince received him with a low obeisance, and offered him a cup of wine; and when supper was served, he himself waited on his royal prisoner, told him that he admired his bravery, and that he doubted not the king his father would shew him all honour and friendship.

He continued to treat the French king with every mark of attention, and when it was neces-

sary for him to return to England, and John was to go with him as his captive, still he did every thing to lighten the mortification.

He seated the king on a white courser, with superb trappings, while he himself rode on a little black pony by his side, just as if he had been conducting an honoured guest to his father's capital.



King John and the Black Prince.

And when they came to London, they were received with all respect by King Edward, and sumptuous entertainment provided for them; and a little time afterwards the Lord Mayor invited the Kings of France and England, and David the King of Scotland, who happened to be in London, to dine with him at the Guild-hall.

Edward the Third had the grief of losing his son the Black Prince not very long after this. He died of decline, leaving one little son called *Richard*; and as King Edward was now near his

end, he presented his grandson to the parliament, and he was made Prince of Wales. And then there was a grand jubilee or festival proclaimed over the land, because it was the fiftieth year of Edward's reign.

But alas! the poor king had little enjoyment of life, for he had fallen into bad health, and was weakened both in body and in mind. In this state of things an artful woman, named Alice Peers, gained such power over him, that she ruled the king in every thing, and he dared not oppose her. And though he allowed her every indulgence possible, and much more than she deserved, she behaved to him most unkindly.

The dying king begged to be attended by his confessor, but she would not allow it, pretending that he would soon be better. Well she knew, however, that it would not be so, and when she saw his glazed eyes, and found his voice fail, she pulled off his jewelled rings from his fingers and left him alone to die.

Mighty victor, mighty lord,
Low on his funeral couch he lies.

All his nobles were gone to the Prince of Wales, and even his servants had deserted him, and were pilfering the palace of all they could find.

But a poor priest found his way to the bedside, and seeing that Edward was yet alive, he admonished him of his state, and bade him prepare to meet his God.

The dying king had just strength enough to

grasp the crucifix which the priest held out to him, and he pressed it to his lips while the tears ran down his cheeks.

It was a moving thing to see this great conqueror lying thus low upon his death-bed, with no child, nor wife, nor friend, nor servant to close his eyes.

One wonders what thought was then uppermost in his mind, and if he regretted the long wars and bloodshed which had taken up so large a part of his life: but doubtless he blessed in his heart that one poor priest who had come to him when all besides had left him, and he passed away with the tears which he had called forth yet upon his cheeks.

* * * * *

It was now three hundred and seventeen years since William the Conqueror subdued England.

Before I say anything about Richard the Second, I should like to mention two or three great changes which had taken place.

You know that the first kings of the Norman race were anxious that their English subjects should speak French, and that many schools were founded in which this language was taught; and all the deeds and writings which the lawyers used were in Norman-French also.

But this French never became common among the lower orders of the English; and fifty years after the Conquest it was found that they could not understand the preaching of the Norman *monks*.

Then, when King John lost Normandy, French declined very fast, and books written in English multiplied. The Saxon tongue was not indeed then what it was before the Conquest; it was changing and softening, and mixing partly with the Norman, partly with the Latin.

If I were to write down a Saxon sentence, you could not read it: the words are different from those we use now. If I were to put down a sentence in the English of King John's time, you would still find it hard; and, even when you come to King Richard the Second, (which is the reign we are now arrived at,) there are many words different from ours, and most of them spelt differently.

You know the parable of the Prodigal Son, as it is in our Bibles—thus it begins:—"A certain man had two sons, and the youngest said to his father, 'Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me.'"

Now a great and very good man, called Wicliffe, translated the Bible into English in King Richard the Second's time, and when he came to this parable, he wrote it thus:—

"A man hadde *twey* sons, and the younger of hem seide to the fadir, 'Fadir, geve me the porcioun of cattel that fallith to me.'"

Again, at the end of the parable we have these words: "for this thy brother was dead and is alive again; was lost and is found."

But Wicliffe's English is thus: "for this *thi* brother was deed and lyvyde agen; he perisshide and is foundun."

This will just serve to shew you that English was not always exactly *the* English we now use; and yet it was growing more and more like what we have now.

But in the middle of Edward the Third's reign, about which we have just been reading, there was an act of parliament passed which declared that it was very inconvenient to the lawyers to continue to use French in their courts of justice; for, that now the people really did not understand it, and that therefore all their causes should henceforth be pleaded in English.

And at the same time the schools left off teaching in French, but taught English instead.

* * * * *

The other change I wished to mention, concerned the clergy. I told you that monasteries, abbeys, and priories, were inhabited by *monks*, and that monks, though they lived under one roof, were each confined to his separate cell.

These monasteries or abbeys had large landed possessions, and many of them possessed great wealth; but, in the year 1215, about the middle of Henry the Third's reign, there rose up an order of people, who were called *friars*, to distinguish them from the monks, and who did not remain often fixed in one place, but travelled about, preaching, and living upon what they could collect.

They were not allowed by the rules of their order to heap up money or lands; but as they soon became very popular, money flowed in upon

them fast, and they became very wealthy and ambitious.

As they mixed so much more with the world than the monks, they became better practised in business, and more quick in discerning character; they had also greater opportunities of knowing what discoveries had been made, and what was going on in science or art.

One or two of the cleverest men England has ever seen were friars.

These men had no mercy or brotherly feeling for the *monks*. They constantly represented them as lazy, luxurious people; while the monks called them meddling busy-bodies, who were always going about interfering with every body's concerns.

There was truth in both these charges. The abbots and priors were living in enormous state, and when they appeared in public, no people could vie with them in the splendour of their dress.

“No common knight could go so gay,
Change of clothing every day,
With golden girdles, great and small.”*

And the friars were restless, busy people, too often disturbing family peace, and doing mischief under the appearance, and sometimes the desire, of doing good.

A little before Richard the Second began to reign, John Wicliffe, a parish priest at Lutter-

* Chaucer.

worth in Leicestershire, having for some time felt grieved at the state of religion around, set himself to examine whether these things were as Christ commanded.

He took up the Scriptures, and read, and thought, and prayed, and the more he did so, the stronger was his belief that the pope, and abbots, and monks, and friars, and people, were all gone far wrong; and that there would be no way of setting them right until the Scriptures could be readily read by Englishmen in their own tongue.

And upon this, he set himself diligently to work, and with hard labour made a translation of the Bible into the English then spoken, which you know was neither Saxon nor French, but a sort of mixed and altered tongue, much more like what we now speak, however, than either of them.

Wicliffe and his followers got the name of Lollards, and the friars' preaching began at once to be little regarded in those places where they were heard; but people crowded to the sermons preached from the new Scriptures.

Doubtless the pope and clergy were alarmed at the boldness of these men, and many attempts were made to silence Wicliffe; but he had a powerful friend in Richard the Second's uncle, the Duke of Lancaster, and by his protection was enabled to write and preach; and he finally died in peace at his Rectory in Lutterworth, in a good old age.

If the clergy themselves had been more willing

*Wicliffe.*

to amend what was wrong, it would have been happy for them, and happy for the people of England; but though many of them were excellent men and pious Christians, they could not get courage to reform themselves, and hence it came about that the work was put off for a long time after Wicliffe's death; and, meanwhile, many people called Lollards were put to death at different times for denying some of the doctrines of the Papal Church.

I should also like you to be aware of several changes in the domestic habits of the English people which took place during and after the reign of Edward the Third.

When we looked round the kingdom at the

time of Henry the Second's accession to the throne, we glanced first at *the Castle*.

We found it a strongly fortified place, well fitted for defence, but possessing very few comforts and but poor accommodations for delicate ladies and accomplished gentlemen.

But after the reign of Edward the Third the castle became more like a mansion: there were several courts, and the inner court was surrounded by spacious apartments; the hall, the banqueting-room, chapel, and many sleeping-rooms.

The windows were also now large and beautifully ornamented: the keep was a separate building. Among these later-built castles, was that at Windsor, built by Edward the Third, and also Warwick, and Ludlow, and Ragland, and many other beautiful buildings.

Here our ancestors used to sit down to their great banquets. The dinner-hour in Edward the Third's time was probably about nine o'clock in the morning, for there were no breakfasts. Supper was served between three and four, and the castle gates were shut at eight.

But in the reign of Richard the Second, to which we are now coming, breakfasts appeared again; bread, and wine, and beer, boiled beef, herrings, brawn, and mustard.

Richard the Second kept two thousand cooks; and when he celebrated his Christmas at Westminster-Hall, the daily consumption was twenty-eight oxen, three hundred sheep, besides fowls *without number*.

What is very curious in the account of the feastings of that day, is the great pains that was taken to make everything look as showy and grand as possible.

Thus, some instructions to the cook direct that, "when a pig is roasted, there should be laid athwart him always one bar of silver foil, and another of gold, and he should be served all whole at the board of my Lord."

They were extremely fond of making devices called, "subtleties," for the table. Jellies, paste, and so on, worked out into figures of saints, patriarchs, and sometimes even of angels.

A very grand middle dish was a peacock, which had been skinned, (the feathers, &c. remaining on the skin,) then the bird was roasted and basted with yolks of eggs, and when it was done enough, the skin and feathers were put on again, and so it was set on the table.

Through a great part of the year, however, the gentry lived a good deal on salt meat.

As yet chimneys were little known; in the houses of the common people indeed they were not in use till long afterwards. But it must be noticed that the English of that day appear to have been a hardier race than we are.

They do not seem, in common cases, to have thought of a fire for anything but necessary cooking, except in very severe weather.

As a proof of the hardy way in which young men were brought up, we may mention that at Oxford no fire was allowed so late as the reign of Henry the Eighth.

The students used to sup at eight o'clock, study till nine in winter, and then take a run half-an-hour to warm themselves before they went to bed.

KING RICHARD II. 1377—1399.

There was at least one very striking trait in this king's character. It was his love of finery. He was the greatest fop, in the most foppish court England ever saw.

He had a coat alone that cost thirty-thousand marks, probably from the quantity of precious stones with which it was embroidered, for this was the fashion of the day, mottoes, and letters, and leaves, and flowers, worked on the borders of the dresses.

The king is drawn in one of the old pictures of the time in a robe covered all over with roses.

Party-coloured robes, and even stockings, were also much worn, half the garment being of one colour, half of another.

The clergy were grander than any, riding, armed with gold, on high horses, with gowns of scarlet and green, and long piked shoes. Sometimes they carried broad bucklers and



King Richard II.

swords, and many priests had mitres on their heads, set with pearls, and a staff of gold in their hand.

Different trades, and professions, and ranks, began to be known by something different in their dresses; and in this reign a great poet, whose name was Chaucer, wrote a number of poems in much the same English as Wicliffe, which poems, though not easy to read now without a little study, have great beauties, and describe the people around him, their manners and habits, it is probable, very correctly.

King Richard, though only eleven when he came to the crown, had been brought up among tournaments and gay spectacles, and, like Edward the Second, had been early spoiled by flattery and prosperity.

His faults were very like those of that king; like him he had many weak, unworthy followers, whom he indulged to his own and people's hurt.

He seems to have thought that his whole life was to be one of gaiety, splendour, and pleasure. The city of London was full of revelry when he entered it for the first time after the death of his grandfather. The city fountains instead of giving out water were made to flow with wine; and as the king halted in Cheapside, four beautiful maidens in white filled each a golden cup at the precious fountains, and offered the drink to him and his lords.

Every street offered some new and splendid show, and all seemed to have forgotten the glory

of Edward the Third, and to think only of the boy-king before them.

Next year he was crowned ; and then again wine of four different sorts was made to flow through public channels for all who chose to partake and be merry. But graver counsellors and the calculating Commons began to shake their heads, and express their fears, that so profuse a government would be an oppressive one ; and they determined to look closely into affairs, and not allow the poorer people to be taxed merely to supply wasteful extravagance.

Edward the Third had left a legacy of war to his people : they had now fortresses in France to maintain, and an army to keep what the king had got ; and it was soon found that these required large sums of money. So that though the parliament had voted handsome supplies immediately after the coronation, they were quickly applied to again : they voted more money both this and the next year.

But when Richard's chancellor came again the year after, the house answered, that "if their lord the king had been well and reasonably governed in his expences, he would not have needed to have taxed his poor Commons thus."

However, they raised some supplies of money ; but when the chancellor told them not long afterwards that he must have a hundred and sixty thousand pounds more, they said it was "most outrageous and importable."

Thus things went on. Every year the king

wanted more and more money, and every year the people liked less to give it.

A lower order of persons than had ever been taxed before were now taxed. Twelve pence (worth much more in that time than in ours) was demanded from every male and female, of every condition, who had passed the age of fifteen years.

This was resisted as a most vexatious imposition, and the insulting conduct of the tax-gatherers incensed the people still more against the government. They were not angry with *the king*: they did not think, being so young, that he was so much to blame as his ministers; and when they came to open revolt, they still swore fidelity to Richard and the Commons.

Many of these men were followers of Wicliffe; but, as it happens in all popular tumults, a vast number of persons joined them who had no idea of anything but of making a riot.

Large bodies of them, commanded by a man named Wat Tyler, went up to London; and they sent a message to King Richard, begging to have an audience of him.

Some of Richard's best counsellors would fain have had him go, for they thought the sight of the king and his ready and early hearing their demands would have pacified them.

But the proud Archbishop of Canterbury, the chancellor, and the treasurer, would not hear of it, and called the people "shoe-less ribalds;" which contemptuous speech coming to the ears of the men, they swore vengeance on the archbishop.

It was in an evil hour for himself that he gave the king such advice, for, not long after, the mob seized him and the treasurer, who were in the Tower together, and beheaded them on the spot.

Still further, they proceeded to the Savoy palace, belonging to the Duke of Lancaster, the king's uncle, where they burned the dwelling and all the splendid furniture, getting drunk with the wines, and committing every possible outrage.

The king had, meanwhile, granted them all reasonable demands: but being now too much elated with their success to be easily satisfied, they required more favours from him; and, accordingly, a meeting at Smithfield was appointed between the king, his knights, and the leaders of the mob.

Wat Tyler stepping forward, then begged that all the lawyers might be beheaded; and while he was insisting on this and other such demands, he kept playing with a dagger.

Some who stood round, either thought, or pretended so, that he was going to strike the king with it, especially as he suddenly seized the bridle of Richard's horse.

And at that moment, Walworth, the Lord Mayor of London, alarmed for his sovereign, seized a weapon and darted it at Tyler's throat, while another person followed up the blow.

Wat Tyler died almost immediately, and the mob, seeing him fall, set up shouts of vengeance, and bent their bows, ready to shoot the king's *party*.

But young King Richard, who at this moment seemed to be inspired with the spirit and bravery of a man, rode instantly towards them, exclaiming, "What are ye doing, my liege men? Will ye kill your king? Be not sorrowful for your leader, seeing he was a traitor and knave. I myself will be your captain and leader; follow me."

This address astonished the mob; and the chief men among them readily following the king, he put himself at the head of the whole, and in that order led them quite out of the city into the fields.

Meanwhile, the mayor collected a strong armed force, and rode after his royal master; and when the mob saw so formidable a body coming upon them, having no leader or discipline, they threw down their arms, and fled in every direction.

The good-natured king, after having so far succeeded, would not allow his followers to pursue them; and they were not punished until after the meeting of parliament, when about two hundred and eighty-five,* who were supposed to be particularly guilty, in different parts of the country, were made examples of, and the rest freely pardoned.

Thus Richard the Second's reign soon became troubled, and graver difficulties crowded upon him. The Commons, who, by the law of the realm, were justified in remonstrating against his

* *Note.*—Of these 151 were Londoners, 23 Middlesex, 20 Suffolk, 17 Norfolk men, &c. *Turner's England.*

ministers, now set themselves steadily to oppose their illegal acts.

The king is said to have remarked upon this, that he would not remove the lowest scullion in his kitchen to please them; but the Lords and Commons both uniting together, he was obliged to give way, and dismiss his chancellor.

Eight years passed away in continual quarrels; and though the king sought to amuse the court and people with a magnificent tournament, and with many other splendid sights, he could not regain the confidence of his parliament.

But the worst of his actions was the murder of his uncle, the Duke of Gloucester, whom he cruelly himself betrayed into an ambush which he had planned for him, and caused him to be conveyed to Calais and killed.

His excuse for this wicked act, was, that the duke meant to murder him. From this time he was justly regarded as a tyrant, and took the precautions of one; for he was always guarded by two hundred bowmen wherever he went.

It was not long after this act that he banished two noblemen, one the Duke of Norfolk, and the other Henry of Lancaster, his uncle's son.

People began to say, "The wicked King Richard will spoil every thing. Since he took the throne, nothing has prospered in England. He minds only idleness, dissipation, and collecting treasures.

"He has killed Gloucester and Arundel, *banished Henry of Lancaster and the Percys: soon there will not be a valiant man left in Eng-*

land. Henry of Lancaster ought to be invited here to reform the government. Richard should be sent to the Tower.”*

So said the people: and they agreed to send to Henry who was in France. The Archbishop of Canterbury went over to confer with him, and describing the state of England, begged him to return.

Henry did not immediately reply, but pondered upon the matter; and after consulting his friends, several of whom were banished as well as himself, he agreed to make the attempt, bringing over with him sixty thousand men.

King Richard was, unluckily for himself, in Ireland at this time, and the news of Henry of Lancaster's arrival in Yorkshire reached him there. Some of his counsellors advised him immediately to return; but one of them recommended him to delay, and send the Earl of Salisbury over first.

He did so: but, before he could follow, poor Salisbury's soldiers had most of them left him and gone over to Henry; and when Richard at length reached Conway Castle in Wales, where he and his few remaining followers were stationed, the contest was a hopeless one.

King Richard's grief and despair were violent; he broke out into passionate exclamations, and particularly mourned over his separation from his queen. Richard, young as he was, had been


twice married. His first wife was generally called "The good Queen Anne," and was every where beloved. His present wife was one of the King of France's daughters; and those who were with the king could not help being touched by the violence of his sorrow when he dwelt upon the thought of her.

"Oh, said he, my mistress, my consort, little does that man love us, who thus separates us. Oh, my fair sister, my lady! robbed of the pleasure of beholding thee, pain and affliction oppress my heart."

But all this availed nothing. He was soon made prisoner by Henry's friends, and carried to Flint Castle, where the Archbishop of Canterbury met him, and gave him such comfort as he could, telling him his life was safe, though not his crown.

Henry himself shortly followed: "Fair cousin of Lancaster," said Richard as he entered, "welcome!" The duke bowing, answered, "My Lord, I am come home sooner than you looked for; the reason whereof is, that common report says, for twenty or twenty-two years you have very badly governed the people. But, if it please our Lord, I will help you to govern them better." To which, Richard answered, "Fair cousin, if it pleases you, it pleases us——"

The duke then called in a loud voice for the horses, and immediately two miserable animals were brought out, one for the king, the other for Salisbury, and so they rode to Chester, the common people mocking the unhappy king, and,



while all cheered the duke, none said, "God bless King Richard."

It was sad to see how ungenerously Henry used his triumph, and how cruelly too: for the persons whom he appointed to have the charge of Richard, were of all others likely to use him worst, being the sons of the Duke of Gloucester and Earl of Arundel, whom Richard had put to death.

At that time of day, when all travelling was on horseback, people were long in performing a journey, and it therefore was some little time before Richard and the duke reached London.

At Lichfield he was very near escaping. He *had* proceeded so far as to slide from the window of the tower where he rested for the night, into the garden; but just at that moment some one came by, and he was carried back into his room, loaded with abuse and reproach.

From that time they took greater care, and his chamber had never less than ten or twelve armed men in it. When they got to London, the cry of all the people still was, "The good Duke of Lancaster for ever!" while Richard was deserted by all his friends.

The parliament assembled, and seemed also unanimous in wishing that Richard should resign; and when the question was asked, whether Lancaster should be king instead, they agreed to it. He was *not* the next of kin, and therefore had no proper claim to the crown.

But the people were taken almost by surprise, and Lancaster was popular among them. They

willingly agreed to receive him as king, and Richard was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment at the early age of thirty-one, after reigning twenty years.

THE HOUSE OF LANCASTER.

HENRY IV. 1399—1413.

The first king of the House of Lancaster was Henry the Fourth.

We have seen that he delivered the English from the tyranny of Richard the Second, nor could he be called an oppressor of his people, excepting on one point, and that was a very important one. It was in the reign of Henry the Fourth that religious persecution in England was established by law.

In the second year a law was passed ordering heretics to be burnt; and it was the less to be excused in him, because his father had been the great friend and favourer of Wicliffe, and he himself had been known to maintain some of his opinions.

But Henry was an usurper: he did not feel himself secure on the throne, and he bargained for support from the clergy by promising to be severe to the poor Lollards.

The Commons, however, thought the statute against them too rigid, and begged it might be *changed* or softened; but they were answered

that it ought to be more severe. Then they made their free remarks upon the clergy, and the king forbade them to discuss such questions.

Henry the Fourth was a sedate, serious man, very devout in his habits, and during his latter years his mind was much impressed with the desire to go on a crusade to the Holy Land.

But time was not allowed him for this. He fell into bad health, was subject to epileptic fits, and sometimes was so entirely bereft of sense or motion, that he was believed to be dead.

On one of these occasions, his son Henry, being told that his father was no more, came into the room, and seeing the crown on a cushion near the bed, carried it away. The king, shortly after, revived, and missing his crown, was told the prince had taken it.

He called his son, and said, with a sigh, "My fair son, what right had you to it? you know that *I* had none."

"My Lord," answered Henry, "you won it by your sword, and it is my intent to hold and defend it so, during my life."

The king answered, "Well, as you see best. I leave all things to God, and pray that He would have mercy upon me."*

And shortly after, without uttering another word, he expired, in the fourteenth year of his reign.

* Turner, Vol. 2. p. 361.—Note from Montstrelet.

SECOND KING OF THE HOUSE OF LANCASTER.

HENRY V. 1413—1422.

When Henry the Fifth was young, he was fond of the society of gay, riotous men, who led him into all sorts of pranks; and so he came to be called Mad-cap Harry. And the people of England were somewhat afraid that when he came to the crown, he would not give his mind to the duties of a king.

He often gave his father pain; and as Henry the Fourth declined in health, he used to look forward with uneasiness to his son's future conduct.

On one occasion it is said that the prince and his followers got into great disgrace on account of a frolic: they had disguised themselves like robbers, and attacked some travellers, and robbed them of their money.

The travellers followed them at a distance, and brought the sheriff upon them while they were all eating and drinking in a tavern; but when they found it was the Prince of Wales they were much amazed.

Still they could do no less than carry them before the judge; and the judge, who was an *honest*, upright man, told the prince that he was

very sorry for what had happened, and must commit all the party to prison, except himself, and that though he would not send *him* there, he must inform the king.

This made the prince so angry that he struck the judge as he sat on the bench, upon which the judge instantly committed him to prison.



Prince Henry striking the Judge.

You may suppose, perhaps, that it would fare the worse with this judge ever after; but I am happy to tell you that the same persons who relate this story, add that the king applauded him, and Prince Henry heartily forgave him, and always paid him the greatest deference and respect.

There can be no doubt of this, that from the time Prince Henry came to the crown, he had the wisdom to dismiss all his idle, dissolute favourites.

He did not, like Richard the Second, seem to

think that the people were made for *him*; that because he was a king his life was to be all festivity and pleasure.

But with a steadfast and prompt purpose he turned himself at once to the business of his kingdom.

Unfortunately, however, he considered war as his duty; and taking Edward the Third for his model, he resolved to conquer France, nay, if possible, to be King of the French.

One of the French princes, who had only heard of him as Mad-cap Harry, (and thus had no great opinion of him as a king or warrior,) affected to be much amused at the idea of his claiming the crown, and sent him a present of some tennis-balls, in order to shew his opinion that Henry was only fit to play at such games as these.

Henry answered, that he would soon send him some London balls, which would knock his house about his ears. And he kept his word.

The clergy of this period were generally the promoters of war. In every time of peace they had found that the people turned their minds to enquire into the doctrines and discipline of the Church: they dreaded this, seeing the unsettled state of mind it produced among their followers, and also, doubtless, fearing for their own worldly endowments.

They knew that the king would be glad to use their wealth for his own objects, and they were more willing to give it him themselves for the purposes of foreign war, than to have it taken *from them* by the reformation of their abuses.

As for the parliament and people, their notions of the glory of a kingdom were like those of their age: they were willing to pay very dear for the sake of the empty fame of carrying their conquests into foreign lands.

France was in a very divided state. The king was at this time deranged, and was governed by the Duke of Orleans, his brother; but there was a haughty, ambitious cousin of his, the Duke of Burgundy, who, having quarreled with Orleans, caused him to be waylaid and murdered, and got himself possession of the king.

Then there was war between the son of the Duke of Orleans and this Duke of Burgundy, and sometimes the king was removed from the power of Burgundy, sometimes remained in his hands.

The French king's son, the Dauphin, was a warlike man, and defended his father and his crown very valiantly against Burgundy; but still the contest did not seem likely to be terminated, when Henry the Fifth of England came forward and put in his own claim to the crown.

He carried over his army from Southampton to a town on the French coast, called Harfleur, a place of great importance, and strongly fortified.

This place he took, after a desperate siege of thirty-eight days; but it cost him a great portion of his brave army. The country round was marshy and unwholesome, and disease spreading through the camp destroyed numbers of the best soldiers.

He, however, had gained a very important

advantage in securing this place, which would have at any time given him a passage into France; and having done so, his wisest course would have been to return to England for a season, in order to recruit his suffering army.


But Henry was full of the false ambition of his age. He scorned to act as if baffled in any enterprise, and, rather than return in the shortest and safest way to England, he thought proper to undertake a march by land to Calais, (about one hundred miles,) for no other purpose than to shew his prowess, as there was no object to be gained by it, Calais being already in the hands of the English.

It was merely undertaking an eight days' pilgrimage through a hostile country, in order to embark at a different port from that at which he now was.

He sent away his fleet, gave leave to any of his soldiers who pleased to return by it, and set out on this mad-cap expedition with only a small army, perhaps about 9,000 men.

The first half of the journey was well performed, and in the time they had calculated upon; but when they reached the town of Abbeville, the case altered.

Near that town, the river Somme had to be crossed, and the French had taken care to break down all the bridges and to guard all the fordable places; so that there was no possibility of getting onward without travelling a great way up the country, perhaps about sixty miles to the *head of the river*.



However, after some days had passed, during which they underwent great miseries and dangers, they came to a part of the river, which, though very dangerous, was not impassable, and which the French had neglected to guard.

By great care and good management, Henry carried all his followers safely over at this place, to the mortification and surprise of the French, who with all their numbers were outwitted, and could not prevent the passage.

Still, the way was long, and this little band, exposed by their rash king to the might of all the armies of France, knew full well that they could only reach Calais by fighting their way through the enemy.

As if to taunt them, the French sent three heralds, telling them they intended to give them battle before they got to Calais.

The king heard them with good temper, and only answered, "Be the event then as it pleases God." And he gave the heralds a hundred gold crowns, and let them depart in peace.

At length, they arrived near the village of Agincourt, and the French armies gathered around them. They spread over the country like a mighty forest, and it was plain that the fate of the English was well nigh sealed.

The accounts of the numbers of the contending parties as given by different writers differ very much; but the very lowest calculation made by the French gives three Frenchmen for every Englishman; but this was certainly wrong, the English who were in the battle, state their own numbers

at 9,000, those of the French at 100,000; and as this is confirmed by some of the French, it is probably nearer truth.

Whatever may be thought of Henry's unwarrantable daring, and even cruelty, in exposing his army to such danger merely out of bravado, this must always be regarded as one of the most remarkable battles ever fought.

It lasted only three hours; but it ended in the total defeat of the French. So admirably had Henry placed his small army between two woods, which defended them on each side, that his loss was comparatively small, while the French lost the flower of their nobility,—the Constable of France, the Admiral, the Royal Dukes of Berri and Alençon, and many others, besides about 10,000 men.



Battle of Agincourt.

All this slaughter to gratify the ambition of a king! And when it was ended, there was no

object gained but that of an easy passage to Calais.

There is no denying Henry the praise of the most dauntless bravery and skill; neither can we help admiring his presence of mind, and the generosity and modesty of his demeanour after the victory.

The people of England, meanwhile, thought the honour of this great victory quite enough to repay them for all its hazards and expences; and cordial was the welcome their valiant king received when he landed at Dover, and proceeded to London.

The Lord Mayor and twenty-eight Aldermen in their scarlet gowns, and twenty thousand of the citizens on horseback, in red, with hoods of red-and-white, went to meet him at Blackheath, carrying all sorts of banners with fanciful devices.

And when the king reached London Bridge, an immense statue was seen, bearing the likeness of his majesty, having a great battle-axe in the right hand, and the keys of the city in the left.

And on the other side was a female figure scarcely less in size, in a purple robe and womanly ornaments, intended to represent the wife of the other figure, which seemed a curious fancy, as the king was not at that time married.

A thousand showy fancies and devices met his eyes at every turn, and "Welcome, Henry the Fifth, King of England and of France," sounded in his ears. The roofs and windows crowded with gay ladies, the footways thronged with the

lower people, the whole city was in an uproar of joy.

But what of all this? Spring came, and the English expected something would have followed from the victory of the year before. Henry, however, stayed quietly at home for two years.

At the end of that time, the internal dissensions of France still continuing, he again invaded that country; and having taken several of the chief towns, the French king's ministers found themselves obliged to make peace with him to prevent the entire loss of the country.

It was then agreed that Henry should marry Charles's daughter, Catherine, that, while Charles lived, he should be called Regent of France, and that when he died, he should be king in his stead.

Of course, the Dauphin, Charles's son, did not approve of this treaty. He had no inclination to lose his father's dominions, and he still therefore remained opposed to Henry, who, however, married Catherine, and carried her to London, where she was soon after crowned.

There was much to admire in the character of Henry the Fifth, when we consider the disadvantages of the time in which he lived. He was very kind to the poor, and firmly maintained justice; hence the poor every where loved him.

He would not suffer his noblemen and gentlemen to trample on them; and even while in France, in a hostile country, he was so careful of the lower classes, that they suffered much less *by his followers than by their own nobles.*

Thus, though a foreigner and usurper, he was really popular in France. But he did not escape the bigoted notions and practices of his time, and considered that no better atonement could be made for sin than the persecution of heretics and Lollards.

He even personally attended at the burning of one for heresy. He took infinite pains to convert this offender, and was extremely distressed at his obstinacy, arguing with him with all his might. But when he found it was all in vain, and that the poor man persisted in his belief, he left him to his fate.

Afterwards, he exerted himself very actively in suppressing the Lollards, many of whom were hardly dealt with.

But Henry's own end drew near. He was now thirty-six, in the prime of life, and in good health, when the Dauphin of France having taken up a very strong position against him, Henry thought it right to go to Paris with his queen.

From thence he marched with an army against the Dauphin, but on the road was taken ill of a disorder, which, continually weakening him, and being neglected in his eagerness to pursue his conquests, brought him to his end on the thirty-first of August, 1422, leaving his queen and infant son to the care of his brother the Duke of Bedford.

His embalmed body was placed in a funeral-car, and sent from France for interment in Westminster Abbey. The whole way to Calais it was

attended by persons dressed in white, carrying lighted torches, and walking on each side the car, while the queen, and many princes, nobles, and clergy followed.

Wherever it rested, rows of priests were ready with their masses and requiems for the soul of the departed king.

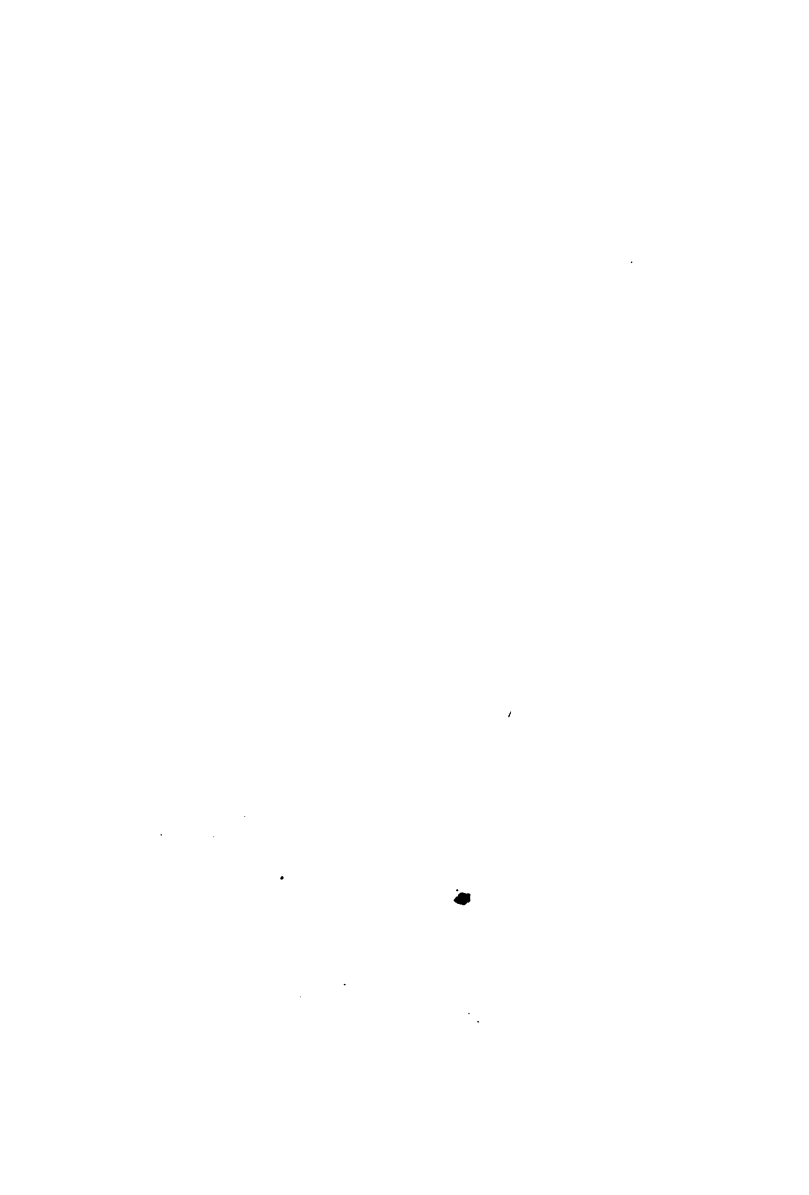
At Calais it was embarked on board a vessel for Dover, and in London the body of Henry was received with the deepest grief, and committed to the tomb amid the tears of his subjects, who had so lately welcomed him with delight.

Many there were, doubtless, who had been estranged by his religious persecutions; but still the body of the people loved him, and as much honour and reverence was daily paid to his tomb as if he had been a saint.

The tomb of Henry the Fifth in Westminster Abbey, is still a beautiful and impressive memorial of him, and there hang the casque and helmet, the shield and the war-saddle, which the hero used at Agincourt.



Tomb of Henry V.



ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND CO.

65, Paternoster-Row.

1838.

ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

HENRY VI. 1422.

THE babe whom the warlike Henry the Fifth had left behind to rule over his kingdoms, was, at the time of his father's death, only nine months old.

Two months had scarcely passed, before this child's grandfather, the King of France, also died. It had been settled when the late King Henry married the daughter of this king, that he should succeed to the throne of France after the death of his father-in-law; and although *he* was dead, his brothers, who had the care of young Henry, were determined not to lose for him such a great honour as that of being King of France.

They, therefore, proclaimed him king on the day of his grandfather's funeral, and his uncle, the Duke of Bedford, was made Regent of France and Governor in the name of his nephew Henry.

But the son of the late King of France would not submit to give up all his father's dominions

pressed the siege so vigorously that the poor Orleans people were reduced to the greatest distress and misery; yet their spirit increased with the danger, and they all vowed to defend themselves with their last breath.

And now appeared, to strengthen their courage and give them timely aid, a most extraordinary person, whose history I must tell you as far as I can gather it myself.

JOAN OF ARC; OR, THE MAID OF ORLEANS.

There was in a little country village in the province of Champagne in France, a poor peasant girl, named Joan of Arc. Her father was a small farmer, and both he and his wife were pious, simple, honest persons, very much respected.

They had three sons and two daughters.

Joan, who was one of the latter, was taught very little. She could neither read nor write. She learned the Lord's Prayer and the Creed, and used to go to mass, and confess to the priest. She could sew and spin well.

Everybody said she was well-behaved, modest, and industrious; she was charitable too, and used to visit the sick poor; she was dutiful to her parents, and always shunned bad company.

She was always singularly grave and devout. Not like the greater part of the villagers, fond of dancing and singing; but while they were amusing themselves thus, she used to steal into the *church* and pay her devotions.

She was sometimes found all alone there, kneeling before the image of our Saviour, or of the Virgin Mary. When she kept her father's sheep, if she heard the bell for worship sounding at a distance, she would fall on her knees in the meadows, and pray amid her flock.

In other things she was like the rest of the young people of her station : she used to work in the fields with her father and brothers, to pull up weeds, or break clods of earth, or make hay, or lead the cattle to pasture.

At home she spun hemp or wool, or did whatever was required in the family. It was said she was so kind and gentle that she tamed every one who came near her, and that the birds would feed out of her hand.

She was doatingly fond of her country; and, when she grew older, her heart was deeply grieved at the distractions which reigned in it. Though her native village was so retired, yet she constantly saw the young men taken away to fight the battles of the nation, and she heard on their return all they had to tell of the struggle between France and England.

She used to think a great deal of the dishonour of France, and she continually meditated on the danger which threatened it.

Gradually she began to fancy that she was destined to do something in its behalf. She thought she heard a voice speaking to her, and telling her she must go to the French king.

Her mind, there can be no doubt, was disordered, and she continually fancied that saints and

As they could learn nothing unfavourable, it was at length resolved that she should be admitted to see and speak to the king. The time fixed was after dinner, when many lights were blazing in the royal hall, and full three hundred gay knights and lordlings were present.

As some of these were more richly dressed than the king, and as they stepped before him in order to deceive her, it was thought likely she would not address the right person.

But she did. She went straight up to him, embraced his knees, and said, "Gentle king! God grant you a long life!" He pointed to another, as if to shew that *that* was the king, but she would not be deceived.

She had never till then seen him, but probably he had been described to her, and she of course would be intent on *not* being misled on such an occasion.

The king then retired and conversed with her for some time, and declared himself inclined to think that she was sent to his assistance by Heaven; yet he allowed her to be further examined by his counsellors and parliament, that he might be sure he could lawfully accept her services.

As the people of those days were great believers in sorcery or witchcraft, they did not so much question whether Joan was possessed of supernatural powers, as whether they were powers given her by wicked spirits or by good ones.

She was kept three weeks in uncertainty whether she should be employed or not; and all that time she persisted in the same story. At

last it was settled she should go to Orleans; and Charles gave her a suit of armour.

She had a standard made according to her own directions: it was a figure of the Blessed Saviour, seated on his tribunal on the clouds, (drawn on a white ground,) while two angels knelt before him.

She then drew up a written summons, ordering the English generals and governors to depart out of France, announcing that they should be slain if they disobeyed.

They derided this summons, but they soon found that Joan of Arc was not an enemy to be despised. She set off immediately for Orleans, which was suffering the miseries of war and famine, and entering the city late at evening, was welcomed by the besieged with all the honours that could be paid to any guest.

Her standard floated before her, and she came mounted on a white charger, and dressed in her new armour.



Joan of Arc entering Orleans.

There is not a more puzzling character, it would seem, spoken of in history than that of Joan of Arc. Some writers insist upon it that she was a vile impostor, like Mahomet, for instance, only anxious to gain fame for herself.

But it seems more likely that she really was insane; that she had thought about the danger of France till she persuaded herself she had a call to save it; believing probably, even before this, that saints in heaven were permitted to converse with the faithful on earth, and that she was a person favoured by them from her early youth.

As she went on, finding success crown her career, she grew more and more confident and enthusiastic.

The first day after her entrance into Orleans, she spent in making the soldiers and people acquainted with her. She spoke to many, taking the authority of an inspired leader upon her, and being near enough to talk with the English, she addressed some of them also, and frightened them by her gestures and commanding tones.

It was soon seen that her presence produced a wonderful effect. The English, believing her to be something more than mortal, were dispirited, and the French were cheered.

In the middle of the night, an affray had taken place between part of the French and English armies, and the French were running back into the city, wounded and beaten, when Joan appeared, rallied them, and persuaded them to sally from the town and attack one of the *besiegers'* forts, which they carried, and then

returned in triumph. This first success emboldened them. Other and much greater victories followed. As long as the French saw the Maid of Orleans' standard, they were assured of conquest, and the English trembled as they looked at it.

Once she was wounded by an arrow and fell from her horse; the pain made her shed tears, and for a few moments her followers were disheartened: but, after the wound had been dressed, she went again into the battle, and rescued her standard, which was about to fall into the hands of the English.

In the space of five days, the French under her command had taken nearly all the besiegers' works; and the English army which had been occupied for seven months before this city, and was just about to take it, was driven disgracefully away by the power and influence of a young peasant girl.

You may imagine how Joan of Arc was now honoured by the French, and how dreaded and hated by the English. She grew bolder and bolder. Not only was Orleans delivered, but she took other fortresses and towns from the enemy. She captured Lord Talbot and Lord Scales, the English generals; and the English Regent in Paris trembled for his master's empire.

Then she told Charles that it was time for him to be crowned in Rheims, as she had predicted he would be; and though this place (which was the town where all the French kings were usually crowned) was in the hands of the English, they

deserted it as she approached, and the inhabitants invited Charles to enter. The day after his arrival (July 19, 1429) he was crowned.

And now Joan was taken into the ranks of the nobility of France, and permitted to enjoy all its privileges. If ambition was her object, it certainly was now gratified, and perhaps it really *had* gained great influence over her.

Had she now retired to her quiet village, all ages would have perhaps regarded her as the deliverer of France, nothing would have clouded her glory, and at a distance her sagacity and counsels might have been of service to the royal cause.

But still believing her part to be war, she persisted in going with the army, and directing the generals how to act. She exposed herself in every combat, and though again severely wounded, would not give up.

The following spring, Henry the Sixth was brought by his guardians to Paris, where they thought it right to crown *him* also King of France, in order that the people might not make the want of this ceremony an excuse for withdrawing their allegiance from him.

Very soon after this time, the fortunes of the Maid of Orleans were changed. She had thrown herself into the city of Compeigne, then besieged by the English and the Duke of Burgundy, and resolved to assist in defending it to the last moment.

Her zeal, however, carried her further than *this*: she sallied out, accompanied with 600 men,

from the gates of the city, to attack the besiegers, and, trusting as usual to the effect of her presence, dressed herself splendidly in a purple silk tunic, brodered with gold and silver over her armour.

The English repulsed her three times, and her followers began to fly. The enemy seeing her almost alone, and knowing the importance of such a prize, fought desperately to reach her. Still she kept her standard in one hand, while with the other she wielded her sword and kept off some of her foes.

She reached the bridge leading into the city, but it was crowded with fugitives, and, unable to make her way over it, she was left alone. In this state a soldier seized her tunic, and dragging her off her horse, she was immediately taken prisoner.

Poor Joan of Arc had little chance of mercy at the hands of those who had captured her. It was not merely that she was a valiant enemy. Her claims to be sent by Heaven, and to have power given her by the spirits above, obliged the Church to take a part in the proceedings against her.

I have before said that in those days there was a general belief in witchcraft: it was believed that some wicked people had intercourse with devils, who gave them power over the souls and bodies of other men; and this sad belief led to acts of dreadful cruelty.

If a person was suspected of witchcraft, no torment was reckoned too great to be applied for

detection or punishment. Even in much later times, if an old woman was rather odd in her appearance, or lived much alone, she was often suspected of dealings with the devil; and the neighbours thought it lawful to half-drown her, or to prick her with pins till she was nearly killed, in order to make her confess.

But Joan of Arc lived in still darker days; and the wonderful actions she had performed, and her high pretensions to see and talk with angels and saints, gave rather more excuse to those who, after having suffered from her enmity, now saw her in their power.

She made several attempts to escape, and being shut up in a castle, she one day leaped from the top of a high tower, and fell down senseless, but was not killed. After that, she was very closely kept, being put into a prison at Rouen, her feet and legs were fastened by a chain to her bedstead.

She was treated very harshly by the English, who all regarded her as a witch and an outcast, having no claim to common humanity.

The French who were not of Charles the Seventh's party, and the followers of the Duke of Burgundy, were alike her enemies. Bishops and cardinals and inquisitors sat in judgment upon her, and they at last agreed in condemning this poor unfortunate woman to be burned as a witch or sorceress.

No one pleaded in her behalf: the ungrateful King of France, whose throne and kingdom she *had saved*, appears to have left her quietly to

her fate. When she was brought to the stake, indeed, her sufferings, and the steady conviction she still expressed that all she had done was by the order of Heaven, softened many hearts; but no one interposed; and Joan of Arc, the heroic deliverer of France, was put to this cruel death in Rouen, at the age of only twenty.

It is said that her father and her eldest brother died of grief at her fate.

So ended the history of the Maid of Orleans.

I told you that young Henry had been brought to Paris by his uncle, to be crowned King of France, after Charles the Seventh had been crowned at Rheims.



Henry VI. crowned King of France.

Many grand and fanciful shows were, on this occasion, made to amuse him; and at the dinner

after his coronation were several pageants, and, next day, a tournament.

And when he came back to England, the citizens of London were bent upon not being outdone by the citizens of Paris, and they prepared some splendid spectacles for his reception. They set up on London Bridge a figure of a great giant, with a drawn sword, defying the king's enemies; and as he, the young king, went on, three ladies, all in silk and gold, started out of a tower, and told him that their names were Dames Nature, Grace, and Fortune, who were come to give him all their gifts.

And they sang "an heavenly melodie," the burden of which was—

Sovereign Lord ! welcome to our citie !

Sovereign Lord ! now welcome out of France !

As he rode on, he was stopped again at Cornhill by a tabernacle, in which was seen a learned dame, called Dame Sapience, with a number of children studying round her, and these were called Master Grammar, Master Logic, Master Music, Master Geography, and so on.

Then a dame, called Dame Cleanness, addressed him, and Lady Mercy and Lady Truth came out to speak to him; and there were three fountains flowing with wine in Cheapside, and at each fountain was a lady, called the handmaid of Mercy, Grace, and Truth.

Also, Cheapside was upon this occasion turned into Paradise, being planted with trees, oranges, *almonds*, quinces, peaches, and such things; and

two of the patriarchs were introduced speaking to the king in verse.

The quiet boy of nine years old, who saw all this, did not seem to be much elated by it; neither, surely, did his kind heart rejoice at one part of the "pastime," which was the burning of a heretic in Smithfield.*

When young Henry was seventeen years of age, some of his friends wished that he should be present at the meetings of his councillors, but his governors who had had the charge of him all his life, wanted to keep him a child still, and he seems to have been prevented from learning public business.

He was of the most amiable temper possible; he does not seem to have had any one vice. He forgave the greatest injuries, and loved all his fellow-creatures; but some think that his spirit was broken in his youth, and that he never learned to assert his own dignity. He hated the bustle of royalty, and would rather have been a shepherd.

He allowed himself easily to be managed, and one of his ministers, the Duke of Suffolk, an ambitious man, seeing this, planned the marriage of the young king to Margaret of Anjou, a spirited woman, niece to Henry's enemy the King of France.

The reason Suffolk desired this marriage, was because he thought he should by this

* *Note*.—"In the which pastime, an heretyke was brente in Smithfield." Fab. 421.

means get entire control over the king, and carry on the affairs of the kingdom just as he pleased.

But he could not accomplish it without the consent of the French king; and the latter made it a condition that Henry should give back the greatest part of the towns and cities his generals had won from France.

The English did not exactly know on what terms Suffolk had treated, and they did not oppose the match, but there was much outcry among many when it was found out.

And what made Suffolk still more unpopular, was, that a little after this, the king's uncle, who was called "The good Duke of Gloucester," was found dead one morning in his bed, and was believed to have been murdered, and there were many suspicions that Suffolk, who was known to hate him, was concerned in his death.

After this, he managed to procure the removal of all the king's relations, and all people of high reputation, and he himself and Queen Margaret, who was a haughty, tyrannical woman, governed the poor, gentle king as they pleased.

Suffolk, at length, became so hateful to the people, that the king was obliged to banish him for five years; and as he was going to France, a ship, manned by Englishmen, who were his enemies, intercepted him, and, after keeping him two days, struck off his head.

It is most likely, from all we know of him, that he was innocent of the greatest crimes that were *laid* to his charge, and his murder was a wicked

and base one, but he certainly had been a bad counsellor to King Henry.

After he was removed, the parliament began to make many enquiries into the state of the religion of the country. They complained bitterly that many of the endowments of the Church were given to foreigners, who would not live in England, and neither preached nor taught.

They said the whole Church was held in less respect than formerly; that the people had fallen into *lollardies* for want of teaching.

The friars, who had at first been so useful in pointing out the errors of the clergy, were by this time fallen into much the same themselves. They were delicately dressed; they had lofty mansions, jewels, and bags of money; they were grown voluptuous and ambitious.

YORK AND LANCASTER.

I am now coming to a time of which I shall not attempt to give you any full account, because the changes in the government of this country were so many it would puzzle you.

But you will hear about "The Wars of the Roses;" and I will therefore try to explain what these were.

You know that Henry the Sixth was the third king of the House of Lancaster. When Henry the Fourth was made king, and Richard the Second deposed, Henry was *not* the nearest heir to the crown.

There was another who had a nearer claim, both being descended from Edward the Third; but the Earl of March was descended from the *oldest* branch of his family.

And now Richard, Duke of York, who was the nephew of this Earl of March, would have been the King of England, had not Henry's father and grandfather stepped in and taken the crown.

And he was indeed Henry's heir, so long as Henry had no children. But after a time, a son was born to the king, and then it was settled by the parliament, that as Henry was fallen into bad health, and could not attend to the government, York should be Protector of the Realm, till the young prince was of age.

York, however, and the queen, could not agree; and then began that long time of strife between the houses of York and Lancaster, which is called the Wars of the Roses; because the Yorkists took the badge of a white rose, and the Lancasters of a red one.

And England was in a wretched state, and all good men pitied the good King Henry more especially, who was so kind and gentle to every one, and lamented continually the miseries of the war.

One story I cannot help telling you out of a book in which I lately read it: it is of

THE TWO LORD CLIFFORDS.*

Among the chief captains and fiercest warriors on the Lancaster side, was a Lord Clifford:

* Taken from Miss Aikin's "English Lesson Book."

his father had been a commander on the same side, and was killed by the Yorkists in a battle fought at St. Albans.

This had enraged the young lord so much, that he thought he never could take sufficient revenge upon them.

Five years after, a battle was fought near Wakefield in Yorkshire, in which the Lancastrians won the day, and the Duke of York was taken prisoner.

His second son, the Earl of Rutland, a boy not twelve years old, was with him in the field; and when all was lost, a priest, who was his tutor, tried to escape with him into the town.

But the terrible Lord Clifford, observing the rich dress of the young earl, pursued him, and overtook him on the bridge.

The poor boy was too much frightened to speak a word; but he fell down on his knees at Clifford's feet, and held up his clasped hands, looking piteously in his face, and so silently pleading for mercy.

And his tutor said, "Save him: he is the son of a prince, and may do you good hereafter."

"The son of York!" Clifford cried. "Thy father slew mine, and so will I thee, and all thy kin;" and he struck his dagger into the poor boy's heart.

Then Clifford and some others took the Duke of York, who was their prisoner, and seated him on an ant-hill, and they plaited a crown of grass, and put it on his head in cruel mockery.

And they bent their knees, and pretending to

do him homage, they said, "Hail! king without a kingdom! Hail! prince without a people!"

After this, they cut off his head, and Clifford stuck it on a pole, and carried it in triumph to Queen Margaret, wife of Henry the Sixth, to whose eyes he well knew that the shocking sight would be welcome.



The Head of the Duke of York on the Gates of York.

By these savage deeds, Clifford gained the name of the Butcher.

It was not long before vengeance overtook him; for the next year, in another battle, he was wounded by an arrow in the throat, and died on the spot.

The son of Richard, Duke of York, was now king under the name of Edward the Fourth, and the widow of Lord Clifford, fearing lest this prince should cause the young lord her son to be *murdered*, in revenge for the death of his brother

Rutland, sent him secretly away into Westmoreland.

There the family estates lay, and she had him brought up there, among the moors and the mountains, like a poor shepherd boy.

He was at this time only seven years old, and he grew up without knowing who he was, or the rank which he was born to.

They did not even dare, it is said, to teach him to write, for fear it should be suspected that he was of higher birth than he seemed.


Four-and-twenty years did this young lord lead the innocent life of a shepherd, unknown and forgotten; but at the end of that time, Henry the Seventh came to the crown.

He being of the House of Lancaster, restored to Clifford the estates and honours of his family, which the Yorkists had taken away at his father's death.

Yet this simple man had sense to know that he, who had been bred like a shepherd, was not fit to come to the king's court, and appear like a lord.

And he went and lived retired in a small house on his own estate, where he could improve his mind with reading, and amuse himself with studying astronomy; for when he was a shepherd he had learned to observe the stars.

And having been a poor man himself, he knew how to pity the poor: and instead of being proud and hard-hearted, like the former lords, he was kind to his poor tenants, and servants, and neighbours.



And he was so humble and affable to all, that he lived to a good old age beloved and respected: and down to this very day a memory of him is kept up among the shepherds of Westmoreland, and he is called "*The good Lord Clifford.*"

HOUSE OF YORK.

EDWARD THE FOURTH, 1471—1483.

You see from this story, that Richard, Duke of York, who had been in arms against King Henry the Sixth, was killed in the Wars of the Roses.

Some time before this happened, King Henry had a son born to him, and if the house of Lancaster was to continue on the throne at all, it was plain that this boy was the heir.

But York still maintained that the Lancastrians had no business ever to have worn the English crown, and that he and his children were the true heirs.

And it would seem that the English parliament admitted this, for they made a new act of settlement, by which it was agreed that Henry should keep the crown for life, but York and his family should succeed him; so that the young prince was cut off.

Not very long after this, that battle took place in which York and one of his sons, young Rutland, were killed by the Butcher Clifford.

But Edward, the duke's eldest son and heir, *no way discouraged* at his father's fate, attacked

the Lancastrians, and, after other battles, he was crowned king at Westminster, by the Archbishop of Canterbury, by the name of Edward the Fourth.

And now, in fact, there were two kings in England; but King Henry was soon taken prisoner by Edward's men, and shut up in the Tower, and there he remained for five years.

Afterwards he was again released by Queen Margaret and some noblemen of the Lancastrian party, and again there was a bloody war between them and the Yorkists, but it ended by Edward being completely established on the throne, and Henry kept a prisoner till his death.

You know he was only nine months old when he came to the crown, in 1422. It was now 1471, and during by far the greater part of this time the country had been torn to pieces by wars and quarrels.

The people of England were in a shocking state. Murder was so common that it was thought little of; and when prisoners were taken in battle, it was quite the custom to kill them in cold blood.

The habits of the nation might be said to be worse than at almost any time in history. And so it will always be in civil wars, which are the worst of any, because in them the nearest relations are often opposed to one another.

Fathers are then at war with sons, and brothers with brothers, and cousins with cousins, and the heart gets hardened to it, and a brother learns to kill his brother without remorse. Oh! it is indeed a dreadful state of things.

The young son of Henry the Sixth, then seventeen years of age, was taken prisoner by the Yorkists, not long before his father's death. He was a very fine and promising youth; but, because the other party were afraid of his living to give them trouble, he was slain immediately.

Edward the Fourth had been brought up in such a bad state of society, and all around him were so violent, that one could scarcely expect him to be a good man.

Nevertheless, when once he was settled on the throne, he did many very good things for the people, and he was exceedingly beloved by them.

For though he loved pleasure much,—by far too much,—he was so active, so lively, and had in general so good a judgment whenever he gave his mind to business, that they had the prospect of being governed far better by him than they had been by the Lancastrian princes.

He found the kingdom in a state of the greatest poverty, both as to supplies of men and of money; but, in spite of all his wars, he left it rich and abundant.

His manners also were easy and popular, and this endeared him to the people, especially as he had married an English lady whose friends were not of high degree.

But he was extremely intemperate, given to all sorts of indulgences, and cared little for the opinion of the sober and good; and his death was chiefly occasioned by over eating and drinking.

Yet, though he had not forbearance enough to *refrain himself* from things he knew were wrong,

he was most anxious that his son should be well brought up; and in the last year of his life he drew up a set of rules for his studies and conduct, than which nothing can be better.

The dresses of this reign were magnificent, and, as it might be expected, the lower people began to imitate them; but they were checked in this by the king, who wanted every one's quality to be marked by his dress.

Thus, he procured the passing of an act, by which no one not of the royal family was allowed to wear cloth or silk of a purple colour,—none under a duke any cloth of gold or tissue,—none under a lord any *plain* cloth or gold,—and none under a squire any damask or satin, and so on.

Thus the rank of every one was known by his clothes. But all these plans for settling what other people shall wear have long since been found by statesmen to be foolish and mischievous; and they are now content to let men dress as they think proper: at the same time that it must always be wrong to spend more than we can fairly afford on our clothes.

I will now give you two specimens of Ladies' head-dresses; one in the reign of Henry the Sixth, the other in Edward the Fourth.



*Horned Head-dress of a Lady in
Henry the Sixth's Reign.*



*Steeple Head-dress of a Lady in
Edward the Fourth's Reign.*

The steeple caps were generally three-quarters of an ell high. To match these, the shoes of the gentlemen were equally ridiculous.

They had a point before, sometimes half a foot, sometimes a foot, and sometimes even two feet long, the most ridiculous things; and when they were tired of these, they had what they called duck-bills, having a bill or beak four or five fingers long.

Then, tired of this fashion, they wore slippers a foot broad in front.



Gentlemen of Edward the Fourth's Reign.

Besides finding leisure in the midst of war for fashion and luxury, the English had time also in these two busy reigns for useful inventions.

It was in the year 1474 that Caxton, our first English printer, set up the first printing-press in London, somewhere near to Westminster Abbey.

Printing itself had been invented and practised on the Continent about thirty-six years before, and books printed abroad had been brought to England, but no Englishman had attempted to set up the business before Caxton.

We, who live at a time of day when books are cheap and plentiful, can scarcely form an idea of the cost of forming even a very small collection of useful volumes when all had to be copied by hand.

It was true that people had learned to make

paper a good while before they learned to print upon it, and this was, so far, a very great help to the world, because parchment and papyrus which had been used before were very dear and not plentiful, but still there was all the labour of writing.

I have told you that the monks were of very great use in this work. In every great abbey there was a room fitted up as a writing-room, and as the monks were bound to do a certain portion of labour every day, such of them as were unable to perform other works were obliged to write.

An immense number of people were employed in Europe in this way, yet still the price of books was high, as you may judge when I tell you, that at the time when the wages of a ploughman were only a penny a day, and wheat was five shillings and fourpence per quarter, as much as £66 13s. 4d. was paid for copying a work in two volumes.

Books were so valuable that it was very difficult to borrow or procure what was wanted, and people were obliged to deposit money in pledge when they took one out of a library.

The price of one of Wicliffe's New Testaments was £2 16s. 8d. At that time (1429) wheat was 6s. 8d. per quarter, ale a penny and a farthing per gallon, a whole sheep ready for eating one shilling and fourpence, a calf two shillings and sixpence.

Architecture also advanced, though often checked by the fatal Wars of the Roses.

The beautiful Chapel of King's College, Cambridge, was begun by Henry the Sixth, who laid the foundation-stone in April 1441; but it had not proceeded far before his death, nor did Edward the Fourth help it, but rather pillaged the funds intended for it.

Queen's College, Cambridge, was founded by Henry's Queen Margaret.

And it was in 1440 that Eton College was founded also by Henry the Sixth, for the education of seventy boys; and in Edward the Fourth's time, we find the boys at this school making Latin verses.

As the clergy feared greatly the spread of Lollardism, it had been made illegal to put children to private teachers; and, consequently, the ignorance of the people was so great, that the clergymen of London felt bound to devise some remedy.

Accordingly, they got leave to set up schools in their churches, and it became from that time (1477) common to have a school in a room over the church porch.

EDWARD V. 1483.

RICHARD III. 1483—1485.

When Edward the Fourth's young son, Edward the Fifth, came to the crown, he was of course considered too young to govern the realm, and his uncle, Richard Duke of Gloucester, was appointed Protector.

Richard, afterwards Richard the Third, was a

warlike ambitious man, and had been brought up, like all the men of that time, in war and bloodshed. Hence he probably committed as many bad acts as they did.

But *he* has been dealt with more hardly than others, because all the writers who have given us his history for several reigns afterwards, lived under princes of the Lancastrian line, which had supplanted his.

They, therefore, were hardly fair persons, being of that party which was opposed to the Yôrkists; and it was natural both that some of these should be inclined to pay court to the reigning party, while others merely took things as they heard from common report.

Making all these allowances, however, I believe Richard the Third to have made no conscience of committing any act by which he could secure the crown, but when he had once gained it, he was a good and useful sovereign,—and many of the reforms which Henry the Seventh afterwards carried into effect began in his reign.

I do not at all believe, from what I have read on the subject, that he was the savage butcher that some have called him. I do not think he murdered Henry the Sixth, or his son the young prince.

But I very much fear, that in order to gain the crown he contrived the death of young Edward the Fifth and his brother, though it is possible they might not be murdered exactly in the way it has been said.

However, whether it were so or not, Richard's

was a very unhappy reign, full of plots on one side, and executions on the other.

Yet Richard did what he could to provide better for the future,—in particular he tried to lessen the number of armed followers who attended his nobles and great men; for it had long been the opinion of good judges, that England would never be at peace while every lord might command such a vast number of retainers to follow him wherever he pleased.

These followers, who often amounted to several hundreds, were accustomed to wear a livery, or badge of service; and it was impossible for the land to have rest, while these powerful bodies were always ready to attack one another on the least affront.

It was therefore Richard's aim to discountenance the custom; and this made him unpopular among the nobles, who cared only for their own greatness and splendour.

There was also a mode of raising money from the people practised before Richard's time which he did not approve of, and did away with for a while.

It was to ask the people, in the king's name, for what they called a benevolence; which was not very cheerfully given, but they knew that if they refused they should suffer for it.

But, though he attempted to lay aside this, he could not carry it through, as his necessities were afterwards very great, in consequence of Richmond's invasion.

The reign of Richard the Third lasted but two

years, and that of his young nephew only a few months. Considering the shortness of the time and the continual wars, a great deal of attention was paid to arts and manufactures, to foreign trade, and to the spirit of mercantile adventure.

And all these things prepared the way for the next king.

THE TUDORS.

There have been five sovereigns in England of *Tudor* race, of whom the first was

HENRY VII.



Henry VII.

I cannot give you a very good account of his claim to the throne, for he could scarcely be said to belong to the House of Lancaster; and, unquestionably, Richard the Third had a fair and full title to the crown of his brother Edward, when Edward's own children were gone.

Neither did the people all rise up, (as in the case of Richard the Second,) and call him, as they called for Henry the Fourth, to come to free them from the government of a king who was changing their laws and customs.

But some, and those indeed not very many of the nobles, conspired together to bring in young Henry Tudor, and afterwards to marry him to Elizabeth, daughter of the late King Edward; and their victory was complete at the battle of Bosworth-Field, when King Richard was killed and Richmond proclaimed king.

Richmond's grandfather was a Welsh gentleman of the name of Tudor, who married the young widow of King Henry the Fifth,—hence Henry the Seventh and his children and grandchildren are called *the Tudors*.

Henry the Seventh was the first of the Tudors. He was very well brought up by his godmother, the Countess of Richmond, who was a pious, studious, charitable lady, and her son always delighted to acknowledge her worth.*

Henry was a cautious, sensible man; not like Edward the Fourth, and Richard the Third, a

* She founded Christ's College, and St. John's College at Cambridge.

warlike character, nor yet indolent and slothful like Henry the Sixth. From his general management of the affairs of the nation, a very great improvement took place in the state of the people.

Their ferocious habits were broken through, they became more inclined to the arts of peace; and women, in particular, were now educated in such a manner as to make them better companions to their husbands.

They had before this been generally educated either in the monasteries, or in the families of some noble relative and friend, and they were taught needlework, confectionary, surgery, and a little Church-music. They learned reading also and writing.

But Henry the Seventh's mother being a studious woman, and well versed in French, with some knowledge of Latin, encouraged the ladies of England by her example.

And several fathers of families devoted themselves to the instruction of their daughters. Among others, Sir Thomas More, who was the son of one of King Henry's judges, and who, having several children, took care to have them well taught in all things proper for their station, and also made them good scholars.

He built a large house at Chelsea, and made gardens round it, furnished it with a large library, and a collection of rare birds, animals, &c.

He always had some useful book read during meal-times, that no time might be lost, and all *might* listen and be improved.

If any of his servants wished to be instructed in music or reading, or any useful art, he was willing to help them; and he called his household, "Thomas More's School."

Henry the Seventh had two sons, one of whom was named Arthur, and the other Henry. Arthur was a fine and promising youth, and was at the age of twelve married to Catherine of Arragon.

As he was Prince of Wales, it was thought fit that his marriage festivities should take place at Ludlow Castle; but in a few months afterwards he died, and was buried in Worcester Cathedral, where there is a beautiful monument to his memory.

Then Henry, the second son, was made Prince of Wales, and after a time married his brother's widow.

I told you that King Richard the Third tried to break through the custom of the nobles having such vast trains of followers.

Henry the Seventh pursued the same plan, and with better success.

Once, when he went to pay a visit to Lord Oxford, a very large train of military followers made their appearance to welcome him. When the king saw it, he called Lord Oxford to his side, and took him to task, for breaking the laws he had lately made.

Lord Oxford said it was not usual for him to have all these followers, and that they merely came to do his Majesty honour.

"My Lord! my Lord!" said the king, "I must not suffer my laws to be broken in my presence.

My Attorney-general must speak to you about this."

And accordingly the earl, who had only gathered together this band of men for the occasion, was obliged to pay a heavy fine to the treasury.

This king has been said to have loved money above all things, but it is hardly a fair judgment; for though he frequently sentenced numbers of the nobles to pay large fines, he perhaps did it in a great measure for the purpose of breaking down their independent power.

Many of these men were little kings, by far too rich and great for the peace of the nation; and Henry knew no better way of getting them into reasonable bounds than by lessening their wealth.

But Henry certainly oppressed his subjects in the matter of collecting money from them, particularly in the way of benevolences; which was a hypocritical plan of getting what he wanted, pretending to request loans or gifts of his subjects, which they knew very well they must either comply with, or else be out of the king's favour.

The king's avarice appeared to increase, as he grew older, and when he died, he left his treasury very rich. He reigned twenty-three years and eight months. His monument in the Chapel which bears his name at Westminster Abbey, is a most beautiful work of art.

THE SECOND TUDOR.


HENRY VIII.

All the riches of Henry the Seventh were soon spent. His profuse and showy son made such brisk use of the money his father had left behind, that he was obliged to apply to parliament for more in the very first year of his reign.

The people, however, were worn out by these constant demands, and it was found necessary to pacify them by putting to death two of Henry the Seventh's collectors of fines and other moneys, who had greatly exasperated them.

If the parliament at that time had done its duty, as in the reign of Edward the Third and Richard the Second, these oppressions would have been checked, for it was clearly contrary to English law, to tax subjects without the consent of parliament; but you will find that under the Tudors, the parliaments were much less honest than in former times.

Yet, even then, a stout resistance was made when the king and his ministers demanded an enormous sum, which the House of Commons knew it would be far more difficult for the people to pay, than for the king to spend.



At this time, the king had a minister of great ability, but also of prodigious ambition and love of show, called Cardinal Wolsey. He cared not how he oppressed the poor, if he could but obtain the means of keeping up a splendid train of servants, a sumptuous house, and the richest table ever known in England; and as Henry had exactly the same love of pomp, the king and his minister went hand in hand.

Wolsey had five hundred servants in his train, many of whom were knights, and gentlemen, and the sons of noblemen; and three great tables were every day laid out in his hall for them, each of the tables being presided over by a person carrying a white staff.

His kitchen was on a grand scale, having a master cook, who ruled over the other kitchen servants, and went about daily in garments of damask satin, wearing a chain of gold round his neck.

Then there was a master of the horse, who looked after the stables, grooms, &c.

When the cardinal, who was also Archbishop of York and Lord Chancellor, appeared in public, he wore silk and gold on his own person, and also on his saddles and the trappings of his horses.

A tall, comely priest went before him, carrying a pillar of silver, on the top of which was a cross.

There was also borne before him his cardinal's hat by some nobleman or gentleman bare-headed; and the gentlemen ushers cried out, "On, my

lords and masters, before! make way for my Lord's grace."


Then came Wolsey in his scarlet cloth or silk robes, into his hall, and at the hall door was his mule, trapped all over with crimson velvet and gilt stirrups.

And the cardinal held in his hand an orange, the meat of which was taken out and filled up again with sponge, wherein was vinegar, or some sweet perfume, which frequently he would smell at, that his nose might not be offended by the unwholesome breath of the common people.

In this state used Wolsey to ride out; and when the king came to visit him, his banquets were the most sumptuous that could be imagined, with all kinds of music, and dancing, and masking.

His arrogance was intolerable, and his power both in the church and state being so great, he was accustomed to command the services of bishops and abbots, and even to make dukes and earls serve him with wine, and hold him a bason of water, when he washed. So high was risen the son of the butcher of Ipswich.

You may suppose that, in order to keep up all this extravagance, great wealth was needed. I have told you the Commons House of Parliament refused to comply with all the demands made upon them, which greatly excited the anger of the king and his minister, and for seven years afterwards they did not summon another parliament.



But there were other means by which they obtained what they wanted. There were a number of commissioners appointed, who were ordered to demand one-sixth part of every man's substance for the king's necessities.

Wolsey himself went to the Lord Mayor and chief citizens of London for this money; and, when they remonstrated, threatened that disobedience might cost them their heads. But the voice of the people was again too strong to be resisted.

It sounded loudly in various places, and the king was obliged to send letters abroad, telling his "loving subjects" that he did not mean to use any force, but only to take what they pleased to give him as a benevolence.

This benevolence was made, however, to bring in a considerable sum; and some of those who chose to avail themselves of the king's permission *not* to give, unless they thought proper, were very severely dealt with.

I should have told you that, in the last reign, Cardinal Morton, who was Henry the Seventh's chancellor and Archbishop of Canterbury besides, had taken some pains to reform the monasteries of England, some of which were become not only immensely wealthy and luxurious, but in many cases very ill managed, and schools rather of vice than virtue.

It was now very well known that so far from being the teachers of a holy and pure faith, shewing themselves examples of piety and charity, many of the monks were in the highest

degree worldly and sensual; and hence many good men, though firm Catholics, were desirous of having their institutions thoroughly inspected and reformed.


Now Wolsey was led to follow up and carry much further than Morton this design, partly from the desire to supply his royal master with wealth, and partly because he was really inclined to promote the education of the people.

Though by no means a religious man, he was a lover of learning, and had set his heart on being founder of a splendid college at Oxford; and it occurred to him, that the money which might be wrung from the monasteries which were found to have been badly conducted, would be well employed in this work.

He therefore began a visitation of the clergy in the year 1523; and in consequence of what he then saw and heard, a great many convents and monasteries were suppressed, and their lands and property given to the crown.

At first it was only the smaller houses which were thus suppressed; but the example was set, and though the king scarcely at first consented to the measure, he very soon learned to avail himself of the ready resources thus thrown open to him.

But it is not to be supposed, meanwhile, that a king and a minister like Henry and Wolsey could be beloved by the people: they had been too arbitrary, and cared too little for the feelings of either churchmen or laymen to be popular with either.



And yet there was no *body* of persons strong enough to resist them: the *barons* had been broken down, first in the Wars of the Roses, and next by Henry the Seventh's rapacious attacks upon their purses.

The clergy alone, had they possessed cleaner hands and purer hearts, might, perhaps, have stopped the king and Wolsey: they had immense possessions, and the people, though often disgusted with their teachers, had much of the ancient affection for the Church.

But when the bad practices of the monasteries were published, and the tongue of scandal was allowed to speak plainly, the clergy were panic-struck.

The good among them could not defend what was bad; the evil dared not do it: if it had not been for this, one could hardly account for such a vast work as the suppression of the monasteries being allowed to take place without a general insurrection.

The *people* had more strength than, as yet, they knew, and whenever they did speak out, their voice was heard; but they had no able leaders, no plan of action, and they were often overpowered before they had time to consider what they might have done.

We are now come to a time of the deepest interest, when the Scriptures were once more to be put before the people in their mother-tongue, and when teachers, such as Wicliffe had been,, were to preach and expound them.

It is easy to see that when that time came, and

when the Bible was read in every parish church, the people at large would soon find that the monks had led them very much astray. They would not any longer like to have prayers uttered in an unknown tongue, or to have them addressed to the Virgin Mary or to the saints.

They would see too that they had been misled in being taught that there was merit in making pilgrimages, and offering gifts at the tombs of Thomas a Becket and our Lady of Walsingham; all these things would come into contempt, and the men who taught them thus, would be less honoured.

But Wolsey and the king were not led on in *their* course in this way: they began to suppress the monasteries for their own ends, and not because they thought Popery wrong.

It was happy for the world that the old faith was not extinguished till many people were ready to separate what was true from what was false; till patient spirits had risen up from time to time, shewing that underneath all the mummery and the folly of Popery, there were the smothered fires of true religion ready to burst out and burn freely whenever the rubbish was removed.

And so it was, that between the time when Wolsey first attacked the Church, and the time when the *greater* monasteries were overthrown, and the king had thrown off his allegiance to the Pope, a great many people were brought to examine and enquire into religion.

You will not be surprised to learn that Cardinal Wolsey's prosperity came to an end before his death.

His master, King Henry, was like him in his love of show; but in some other respects he was a far worse man than Wolsey. He was cruel, very capricious, and could sacrifice his dearest friend to any favourite object without the smallest scruple.

It so happened that Wolsey offended him by not assisting him as the king desired in a matter he had greatly at heart. Henry was in love with a beautiful lady named Anna Boleyn, whom he desired to marry.

But before he could do this, it was necessary for him to be divorced from his wife Catherine, whom he had married after the death of his brother Arthur.

The divorce could only be obtained from the Pope, and the Pope was not willing to grant it. Wolsey, too, though not averse to the divorce, did not like the king to marry Anna Boleyn, but proposed a French princess to his master.

Anna Boleyn heard of this, and believing the cardinal to be the person who chiefly stood in the way of her being queen, she was naturally displeased with him.

It was soon seen that the king imputed all the delays of the Pope in granting the divorce to Wolsey; and one by one most of his friends dropped off.

In a short time Henry took from him most of the dignities he had given him; and this great and wealthy man found himself stripped of every thing, and accused by his royal master of high treason.

Wolsey with all his faults had not deserved this. He had in some respects been a very bad minister for the people, but nobody could doubt his faithful attachment to his master.

And he found in return one faithful and grateful friend. He had brought up a young man, named Thomas Cromwell, and had shewn him much kindness. This man would not desert him in adversity, but pleaded his cause in the House of Commons earnestly, and with success.

Afterwards, Cromwell and some few other friends raised a subscription, and paid his servants' wages; for Wolsey had called them round him, and begged them to leave his service, because he could no longer afford to keep them.

If he had not been a kind master to *them*, they would hardly have acted as we are told they did, when he said this: with tears, many of them refused to leave him in his trouble.

He had been now for some time in bad health, and his friends advised him to go to York, that he might be more retired and out of the way of the king; but Henry's anger followed him.

He had not been long at York, before messengers were sent after him to arrest him for high treason. This broke Wolsey's heart. He was so weak and ill that no one thought he could bear the journey to London.

However, he set out, as the king commanded; but when he approached the Abbey of Leicester, he became so much worse, that, feeling he should never leave the place alive, he said to the abbot,

“Father Abbot, I am come to lay my bones among you.”

His faithful servants and physician never left him, and then it was that he was heard to say, “If I had served my God as diligently as I have done the king, he would not have given me over in my grey hairs.” And these were among his last words, for at eight o’clock that same night the poor cardinal expired.

HENRY VIII. CONTINUED.

Some time after the death of Wolsey, the king, having made Thomas Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, and despairing of getting the Pope’s consent to his divorce from Queen Catherine, had satisfied himself with the opinion of the English bishops, which were in his favour.

He accordingly put away his queen, and married Anna Boleyn. By Catherine he had had one daughter, afterwards Queen Mary: and Anna brought him another, who was afterwards Queen Elizabeth.

But the Pope, indignant at the king’s presumption in settling the matter without his consent, published a decree, commanding him to take back Catherine again, threatening him with the papal censure if he did not comply.

And Henry, in high wrath, resolved to separate himself and his country entirely from the Church of Rome, and ordered his clergy to proclaim himself the head of the Church in England.

The parliament, soon after, confirmed this title, and thus it was that the grand step which made England a Protestant nation was taken.

So you see here, as in many other cases, how little cause we have to thank *men* for our best blessings. It pleased God to give this country a better and purer religion; but King Henry had no merit in the work, since it was from no desire of doing God's will, or serving his people, but merely because the Pope had displeased and thwarted him.

This, however, did not make the blessing of the Reformation, as it is called, less; and there were many among the best men of Henry's time who saw the good that was likely to be done, though they could not like the king's motives, and who held themselves ready to improve the opportunity for giving the people more pure and Scriptural instruction.

But there were others, and Sir Thomas More was one, who could not in their consciences give Henry the title he chose of Head of the Church. They said they could only give it to the chief *bishop* of the Church; and they thought the king very unfit to be their spiritual head.

And so he was: and one cannot help feeling that the more honest and conscientious Catholics must have found it very difficult to trust their religion in Henry's hands, especially as they saw plainly that neither the bishops of England nor the parliament would stoutly oppose him, should he propose any bad measure.

Sir Thomas More had been made Chancellor

when Wolsey was disgraced. He was one of the best of men,—devout, benevolent, a learned scholar, a good father and master, and quite different from Wolsey, being as simple and humble in all his habits as Wolsey was grand and showy.

This man Henry could not help loving, and so delightful was his company, that the king used often to come and see him at his house in Chelsea, and spend whole hours in talk with him.

One would have thought that this must have done Henry good; and, perhaps, for the time it did so, but as soon as the king set his heart upon any thing, whatever it might be, which his friend or minister did not approve, it was quite enough to turn him at once into a bitter enemy.

Thus, when Sir Thomas More could not bring his mind to call him Head of the Church, or approve of his separation from Rome, the king was filled with displeasure, and Sir Thomas was soon called upon, as Wolsey had been, to give up all his honours.

It seems hardly to be believed, that Henry should not have been quite content with this punishment, for More was so quiet, so humble, and gentle, that it was quite impossible his master should really be afraid of him.

Far from being ambitious, this good man had never liked a public life; and it quite delighted him to go home to his family and read and study with them, and they were as happy to have him.

But the cruel and unjust king was determined



this should not be; and Sir Thomas More was taken from his own house on a very trifling charge, and committed to the Tower, from whence he wrote many beautiful letters to his daughter, and some books of piety also.

He never lost his cheerfulness and courage, though he could not be brought to comply with the king's wishes, against his conscience; and in this spirit he met death on the scaffold, where he was beheaded.

As to Henry's private life, it was as bad as his public. After all his eagerness to marry Anna Boleyn, three years had scarcely passed before he was tired of her, and in love with another woman, whose name was Jane Seymour.

And he caused Anna, the mother of Elizabeth, to be beheaded, and married Jane the very next day. She lived with him just long enough to bring him a son, (afterwards King Edward the Sixth,) and then died.

It was about this time that King Henry's Archbishop Cranmer, whom you will hear of again, persuaded his master to allow a copy of the English Bible, which had been translated some years before, to be set up in every parish church.

At first, this was considered quite sufficient, and each copy was kept chained to the desk that it might not be taken away; but by degrees the archbishop growing bolder, it became allowable to sell Bibles publicly.

Yet still, there were many checks given to this liberty. Sometimes the king took alarm, and was persuaded for a while to forbid the free use of

the Scriptures. Sometimes "noblemen and gentlemen might read them; but no women, (except noblewomen and gentlewomen,) or artificers, printers, journeymen, &c." then again he agreed to allow them.

And now the king ventured (in 1540) on the step of dissolving the *larger* monasteries. This was indeed a work which required great prudence, skill, and honesty.

It was almost impossible that it should have been done without suffering to many of the persons concerned: they had lived the greater part of their lives in these quiet dwellings, and expected to remain there to their deaths: and though the monks and nuns had all pensions allowed them, yet they had been accustomed to live in ease, and sometimes in luxury, and it could not but be a severe blow to *them*.

It was justly said too, that the wealth of all these rich houses should have been bestowed much more largely upon the education and improvement of the people: more schools should have been founded, more useful works begun.

But, instead of this, a very large portion of the lands and property of the religious houses were squandered, nobody well knew how, in gifts to needy courtiers and favourites of the king.

It was thought too, that the king and his counsellors were very hasty and harsh in destroying *all* these establishments at once. There were some of them very admirably managed, and there were others, which, standing in lonely parts of *the country*, were the only civilized spots, and it

was feared that all the regions about them would fall back into barbarism upon their destruction.

The poor, too, were all on a sudden deprived of the alms, and food, and attendance, which the monasteries were always ready to give, and the tired traveller, at a time when inns were rarely to be met with, grievously missed their hospitalities.

When we read history, it is very interesting to see how sorrow and prosperity are dealt about to all classes of people in turn. We know that there must be sorrow and chastening in the world; but the burden is never carried so long by one nation, or by one part of a nation, as that the spirit is wholly broken. It is shifted about, that all may, in turn, have rest.

The king, the barons, and the clergy in England, had all, in turn, more than their share of power, and each had been busily employed in humbling the other; sometimes one was depressed, sometimes another.

But during the reigns of the Tudors, particularly those of Henry the Seventh and Henry the Eighth, the crown had gained wonderfully in power and wealth. You know how Henry the Seventh humbled the great men, and stripped them of their money, and now you have seen how his son dealt with the Church.

But you do not think that the money stayed in Henry the Eighth's strong boxes! O no! it went all over the land, encouraging trade and agriculture; and though it was often given to favourites who were in themselves unworthy, their children in process of time received it, together with better

education and wiser notions than their fathers had had.

Thus there grew up a race of nobles and gentry in England, not so high as the barons, but ranking above those in trade, who made themselves of more and more consequence in the nation, and came in just when they were really wanted, to check the power of the monarchs, and prevent our being governed by the will of one man, contrary to the law.

After King Henry had lost his third wife, Jane, he took another, called Ann of Cleves. He could not go over to her native country to see her, and was obliged to trust the report of other people about her.

But when she came, he did not like her, and, after having been married a few months, obtained a divorce from her.

This was better than beheading her, as he had served Queen Anna Boleyn, and as happened to his fifth unfortunate wife, Catherine Howard.*

* This lady was the first person in England who introduced the use of that now indispensable article, the *pin*, which was just then brought from France.

Before this time, ribbons, loops, laces, clasps, hooks and eyes, and skewers were used by both sexes for the purpose of fastenings to their dress.

The pin, however, was at first very badly made, and an act of parliament was passed, enacting that no pins should be sold unless they were double-headed, and had "the heddes souldered fast to the shanke of the pynne;" but this act so cramped the trade, that no more pins could be obtained till parliament in its wisdom had repealed it. Pins were acceptable presents

Even after this, another woman was found, courageous enough to be this Blue-Beard's sixth wife; and this was a widow named Catherine Parr.

She, however, managed the king better than his other wives had done, and as Henry was grown infirm and diseased, she became necessary to him as a nurse and attendant.

But even with all her patience and good management, she was once in great danger of losing her life: the king had gone so far as to sign an order for her being sent to prison, when she, being aware of what was intended, coaxed and diverted his mind from the idea.

The death of this king was a blessing to the land. He was becoming more and more tyrannical and cruel; and there was not a day in which some persons were not arrested and sent to execution.

The very night before he died, he had ordered the Duke of Norfolk to be put to death: he was to have been executed the next morning, but Henry died before the fatal hour, and the duke was saved.

His reign lasted thirty-seven years. He was buried at Windsor, by his queen Jane Seymour:

from this time to the ladies; and sometimes they received from their husbands and parents an allowance instead, whence the term pin-money.

See the entertaining and useful little work, called, "Domestic Life in England," p. 280.

EDWARD VI.

Henry the Eighth left three children, two daughters and one son.


The Lady Mary was by much the oldest of these. She was the child of Henry's first wife, Catherine, whom Henry divorced in order to marry Anna Boleyn, and who was sixteen years of age when Elizabeth the daughter of that last-named queen was born.

Edward was the son of the king's third wife, Jane Seymour. It was a thing, of course, that he would rule the kingdom after his father's death; and few people thought much of his sisters' chances of being Queens of England.

The Lady Mary was nineteen at the time of her father's death, and had been brought up by her mother and mother's friends, who were all Catholics; hence she had grown up, as was to be expected, a Papist.

But Edward, who was now ten years old, and his sister Elizabeth, about two years older than himself, had been placed under different teaching. By the time they were old enough to learn, their father had shaken off the Papal authority, and placed them under the care of Archbishop Cranmer.

They learned their different lessons together, and these were not few, for King Henry wished them to be good scholars, and the most learned



men of the age were their tutors. They were taught Greek and Latin, Italian and French.

At the time of King Henry's death, Edward was so young, he was not able to govern the kingdom by himself, and the late king had ordered in his will that some of the great men of the land should manage the affairs till he was eighteen.

Cranmer was one of these, and by his direction King Edward and Elizabeth continued their studies diligently.

It appears that Edward was a very clever, intelligent youth, of such steady judgment, and so devotional a habit, that Cranmer found it easy to interest him deeply in the religious changes then in progress.

He was particularly anxious about the circulation of the Scriptures, and about teaching the people in their own tongue, and used regularly to attend the sermons preached by Bishop Latimer, which were very striking and interesting.

The Liturgy, which had hitherto been in Latin, was also now translated into English, and the people heard prayers in which they could join with the spirit and with the understanding.

This was a very different kind of reformation from that of Henry the Eighth, inasmuch as now the king and many of the great men in the council were really Protestants, and some of the bishops were earnestly striving to instruct the people, and not merely *commanding* them what to do and believe.

But, meantime, the Lady Mary remained unchanged in her faith, and so little disposed to

acquaint herself with the reasons which led Cranmer and the Protestants into their present courses, that when King Edward begged her to inform herself on the subject before she abused them, she said, "As to Protestant books, she thanked God she had never read them, and never intended to do so."

It is always a grievous thing when people resolve to shut their eyes and ears against all that can be said by those who differ from them; but it is also a great fault when such people are treated harshly and with bigotry in return.

This was the case with Edward and the Lady Mary. As she was a Catholic, and really thought the religion of the Reformers was wrong, it was a very harsh and cruel thing not to allow her to have mass celebrated in her own house.

As she thought it her duty not to obey her brother when he forbid her this, she was exposed to his anger, and her servants were punished for countenancing her.

The young king was quite as great a bigot on this occasion as Mary herself; for even Cranmer would have consented to this indulgence, but Edward could not satisfy himself to allow it, though he afterwards permitted his council to take their own course.

It was no great wonder that Mary disliked the Protestant religion. She had very early been made to suffer by it. Her mother's divorce had been the grand occasion of her father's quarrel with the Pope, and it was impossible that she should approve of his conduct in this matter.

When she compared him with Sir Thomas More and some of her friends, she could not but feel that he was governed by far worse motives than they; and as to Cranmer, she regarded him as the person who had helped the king most of all in her mother's divorce.

Then it is certain that the Protestants used to turn the Catholic ceremonies into joke, and to shock the devout people of that faith greatly by their irreverence.

All this we must bear in mind when we read the accounts of Queen Mary, that we may not be unjust towards her.

And we must also be aware that very few people indeed at that time saw clearly how sinful it is to persecute and put to death persons whom we think in great and dangerous error.

As a proof of this: Cranmer, the archbishop, who was so anxious to reform the religion of the state, had no idea it was wrong to shed the blood of several persons who held what he thought was false doctrine.

The young king was, on this point, more inclined towards *right* than himself. *He* strongly remonstrated, and even shed tears when called upon to sign a warrant for the execution of these offenders.

All these things the Lady Mary knew; and was it likely that she, a Catholic, who had been trained to think the decrees of the Romish Church infallibly right, would be more liberal than Cranmer who professed to take the Bible for his guide?

The young King Edward did not live long

enough to marry and leave children of his own; consequently, at his death, the crown went to his elder sister, Mary.

This event took place in 1553, and was much lamented by all the Protestants, who were not yet sufficiently strong to set aside Mary on the ground of her being a Catholic, and who justly dreaded that she would endeavour to undo all the work they had been accomplishing.

END OF PART III.

INTERESTING AND INSTRUCTIVE
WORKS
PUBLISHED BY
HOULSTON AND STONEMAN,
65, PATERNOSTER-ROW, LONDON.

Neatly done up in Cloth and lettered.

A BROTHER'S GIFT TO A SISTER. By R. D. Walker. 12mo. 5s.

TALES of WOMEN'S TRIALS. By Mrs. S. C. Hall. Post 8vo. 10s. 6d.

ROXOBEL. By Mrs. Sherwood. 3 Vols. 12mo. 21s.

This most fascinating narrative presents to the reader a lovely exhibition of Christian character, displayed in the various stages of life, and amid diversified circumstances of trial and enjoyment. It is particularly recommended to young persons of the middle and higher classes.

The BACHELOR'S HOLIDAYS. By a Theoretical Philanthropist. 12mo. 5s.

JAIRUS; or, The HOME MISSIONARY: a Narrative of Facts. By the Rev. John Young. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

The RECORD of PROVIDENCE; or, the Government of God displayed in a Series of Interesting Facts from Sacred and Profane History. By the same Author. 12mo. 5s.

ELLEN WALSINGHAM; or, Growth in Grace. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

FIDELLE, and other Tales: viz.—The Orphans of Malvern, The Black Linn, The Well-Dressing, and The Italian Boy. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

The USE of TALENTS. By Mrs. Cameron. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

Works published by Houlston and Stoneman.

OLD TOBY'S ADDRESSES to his Friends. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

The ELLESMERE FAMILY: a Tale of Unfashionable Life. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

A WINTER at DE COURCY LODGE; or Anecdotes illustrative of Natural History, Animal Instinct, and Reason. By Mrs. Bourne. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

A MEMOIR of SIR THOMAS MORE: with Extracts from his Works and Letters. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

PRACTICAL HINTS to YOUNG FEMALES, on the Duties of a Wife, a Mother, and a Mistress of a Family. By Mrs. Taylor. Price 5s.

"The duties of a wife, a mother, and a mistress of a family, are admirably portrayed and most successfully urged in this little volume. It is a book that will be placed in the hands of those who are to fill those enviable situations, with the utmost advantage. The short religious portion at the conclusion is warm, affectionate, and just, but not tinged with the slightest spirit of fanaticism."

British Critic.

The ITINERARY of a TRAVELLER in the WILDERNESS, addressed to those who are performing the same Journey. By Mrs. Taylor. Price 5s. 6d.

"If an air of sadness should appear to attach to this excellent volume—if it seem to breathe too much of the wilderness, it proceeds from a sorrowful heart—from the mother of the late Jane Taylor."

Eclectic Review.

RETROSPECTION. A Tale. By Mrs. Taylor. Price 6s.

"We give our very cordial recommendation of her present volume, as replete with the most instructive lessons, both to young and old, and in every way worthy of the writer's well-earned reputation."

Eclectic Review.

The FAMILY MANSION. A Tale. By Mrs. Taylor. Price 5s. 6d.

"We are not told whether the Family Mansion is a fiction, or no fiction, but whether the story be real or not, it is all true—true in the most important sense; it has the truth of painting, and the truth of sentiment."

Eclectic Review.

The PRESENT of a MISTRESS to a YOUNG SERVANT, consisting of friendly Advice and real Histories. By Mrs. Taylor. Price 3s. 6d.

"We are happy to announce another publication of this judicious and useful writer, particularly as we think that the present will be found among the most valuable of Mrs. Taylor's productions."

Monthly Review.

Works published by Houlston and Stoneman.

DISPLAY. A Tale. By Jane Taylor, one of the Authors of "Original Poems for Infant Minds." Price 6s.

"The Author of Display comes the nearest to Miss Edgeworth in point of style and skill in developing characters, of any writer that has yet appeared, but her production is distinguished by features of its own. We never met with any composition so completely and beautifully simple both in sentiment and style, which at the same time interested us so strongly by the *naïveté* of its descriptions, sometimes heightened by the most delicate touches of humour and pathos; by the *heart* that pervades the narrative, and the air of reality which is thrown over the characters."

Eclectic Review.

CORRESPONDENCE between a MOTHER and her DAUGHTER at SCHOOL. By Mrs. Taylor and Miss Taylor. Price 5s.

"We have always closed the volumes produced by each of these ladies under the influence of the most pleasing impressions. In the work before us they have united their efforts, and have formed not only a very interesting, but a very useful work. We heartily recommend the volume to our female friends, matronly and juvenile."

Monthly Review.

LETTERS on the Importance, Duty, and Advantages of EARLY RISING. Addressed to Heads of Families, the Man of Business, the Lover of Nature, the Student, and the Christian. By A. C. Buckland: with an additional Letter, and a Preface. Price 5s.

"We cannot afford any more space for remarks on this little interesting and useful volume; but we should fail in our duty to the public, if we did not recommend every parent to make it one of the lecture books of his little family; and if he happen to have no time for the perusal of it himself, as his day is at present laid out, we can assure him that it will amply reward the effort, if he rises two hours earlier on the first morning after he has procured the book, to study and digest its contents."

British Review.

LETTERS to an ATTORNEY's CLERK, containing Directions for his Studies and General Conduct. Designed and commenced by the late A. C. Buckland, Author of "Letters on Early Rising," and completed by W. C. Buckland. Price 5s.

"These letters are well written and sensible, and may, we believe, be safely recommended to the attention of the persons to whom they are addressed. The method of studying the law laid down in them, and the course of reading enjoined, display a very considerable knowledge of the subject, which in the present state of our jurisprudence is by no means an easy one. Upon the whole, a better Manual than the present cannot be put into the hand of an incipient Attorney."

New Monthly Magazine.

PRUDENCE and PRINCIPLE. A Tale. By the Author of "Rachel." Price 3s. 6d.

"The title of this book sufficiently announces the contrast which the writer intends to exhibit; and we may add, that the tale is conducted with simplicity, while it has sufficient interest to attract the attention and to influence the feelings and conduct of young readers."

Monthly Review.

Works published by Houlston and Stoneman.

JOURNAL of LLEWELLYN PENROSE, a Seaman.
In One Volume, 12mo. Price 7s.

The interest of the Narrative, which is not surpassed by any work except "Robinson Crusoe," and the delight it is known to have afforded all classes of readers, but especially the young, are the considerations which have led to the republication of it in a compressed form, and at less than one-third its former price, so as to bring it within the class of works intended for the amusement and instruction of youth.

RACHEL. A Tale. Price 3s. 6d.

—————"Be cur'd
Of this diseased opinion, and betimes;
For 'tis most dangerous."

Shakspeare.

The COUNSELS of a FATHER, in Four Letters of Sir Matthew Hale to his Children. To which is added the practical Life of a true Christian, in the Account of the Good Steward at the great Audit. With a new Memoir of the Author. Price 3s. 6d.

"Much as I have been delighted and interested by the representations which Plato and Xenophon have given of their illustrious contemporary, Socrates, I confess myself to have been equally delighted, and more delighted and more interested, by Hale's *Account of the Good Steward*.—Upon every account of matter, style, and spirit, it is a work which deserves to be read every year by every light of the Church and every sage of the Law in Christendom."

Dr. Parr.

A LETTER of ADVICE to his GRANDCHILDREN, —Matthew, Gabriel, Anne, Mary, and Frances Hale. By Sir Matthew Hale, Lord Chief Justice in the Reign of Charles II. Now first printed from an Original Manuscript, and collated with the Copy in the British Museum. Price 3s. 6d.

"These two little volumes may be safely recommended to readers of every description. They will confirm the sentiments of those who are already well disposed; and may reclaim even the abandoned from an irregular course of life. The Judge here, at the same time, speaks as if seated on the bench, and convinces his readers with the arguments of a divine, and the affection of a parent."

Gent. Mag.

PRECEPT and EXAMPLE, in the instructive Letters of eminent Men to their Younger Friends. With short Biographs of the Writers. Price 5s.

"They form a brief Manual of conduct upon which we may rely with full security, as the collected fruit of wisdom the most sublime, experience the most enlarged, and goodness the most pure, compatible with the imperfect nature of mortality. The names alone of Sidney, Burleigh, Milton, Locke, Newton, and Chatham, bear us out in this assertion; they are immediate passports to our veneration." *Preface.*

Works published by Houlston and Stoneman.

THE AUTHORESS. A Tale. By the Author of "The Jewel." Price 3s. 6d.

"We recommend this volume very strongly, not only to all readers of novels, but to all persons in general, who will learn from it how to discriminate real and ideal life, the feelings of nature, and the representations of art."

New Monthly Mag.

THE LADY'S MONITOR: selected from the Writings of Lady Jane Grey, Queen Katherine Parr, &c. &c. in short Biographs of the Writers. Price 5s.

"It might be truly said, that she who regulated her conduct by the advice and action conveyed in this Manual, would render herself as perfect as human nature could make her; nor is there any emergency of life for which she could not find in it a rule of action which would carry her through it in triumph."

Preface.

THE WELSH COTTAGE. By Miss More. 12mo. 4s.

UGENIA; or the Dangers of the World. By the Author. 12mo. 4s.

SALES of the ENGLISH CHURCH. 12mo. 5s.

PRINCIPLE and PRACTICE; or, the Orphan Father. A Tale. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

EQUEL to Ditto. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

THE LADY of the MANOR. By Mrs. Sherwood. 2 vols. 12mo. 7s. each Volume.

* A great variety of Moral and Religious books for the young, of a superior description.

Houlstons, Printers, Wellington, Salop.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100





ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART IV.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND CO.

65, Paternoster-Row.

1838.

1

ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

MARY.—THE FOURTH TUDOR. 1553—1558.

YOU have seen that Mary was in much disgrace during a great part of her brother Edward's reign, while Elizabeth was in the highest favour.

But when Mary was queen, it was Elizabeth's turn to be humbled and distressed. She was, indeed, one of the splendid party at Mary's coronation, and rode next after the queen's carriage, in a chariot drawn by six horses and covered with cloth of silver; but, soon afterwards, she received so many slights from her



Queen Mary.



Elizabeth at her Sister's Coronation.

sister, and felt herself so hurt at the manner of her treatment, that she thought it better to leave London, and go to her own quiet house at Ashridge in Buckinghamshire.

The queen allowed her sister to leave London, but took care to send with her two gentlemen, who were to watch over her, and see that she did not correspond with any one unknown to them.

It was not very long before some of the Protestants, and others who disliked Queen Mary, raised a rebellion against her; and the queen, suspecting that Elizabeth might be in some way concerned in this rebellion, wrote her a very civil letter, desiring she would come up to London without delay.

It so happened that Elizabeth was ill in bed, at the time the messengers came to fetch her, and the officers of her household wrote to Queen Mary begging a short delay; but the queen, upon a fresh alarm of rebellion, dispatched three more

gentlemen, with a troop of horse, with most positive orders not to return to London without Elizabeth.

It was ten o'clock at night when they got to Ashridge; and Elizabeth was still very ill. Her ladies begged the messengers to wait till the morning; but, instead of this, they burst into her sick chamber, and told her their errand. She was alarmed, but declared herself willing to wait upon the queen her sister as soon as she could without danger leave her room.

The gentlemen told her she must, at all events, go; that they had brought the queen's litter for her conveyance, and, as the doctors did not think her life would be in peril from a removal, they must set out next day.



Elizabeth's Journey to Town.

It was a melancholy morning, for Elizabeth was much beloved. Her servants and attendants wept and lamented, fearing sad things from her

sister's jealousy and bigotry; and so severe also was her illness, that, though Asbridge was only twenty-nine miles from London, her conductors were obliged to let her rest four nights on the road.

When she reached Highgate, a number of gentlemen rode out from London to meet her, and shew her every respect: and crowds of people lined the way-side, weeping and foreboding danger for her; and as she passed through Smithfield and Fleet-street, there were a hundred men in velvet coats following her litter, and a hundred more in coats of fine red, guarded with velvet, who went with her quite to the court.

Queen Mary at first merely detained her at Whitehall; but in a short time, thinking it prudent to imprison her more closely, sent her in a barge with a strong guard to the Tower. Nor would Mary see her, nor would she without much difficulty and persuasion receive a letter from her.



Elizabeth landing at the Traitor's Gate.

When the barge which conveyed her to the Tower stopped at "the Traitor's Gate," she long refused to land there; but her conductors insisting upon it that she should, she put her foot upon the stairs, exclaiming, "Here landeth as true a subject, being a prisoner, as ever landed at these stairs, and before thee, O my God, I speak it, having no friend but thee."

The warders and other attendants, as she went by, knelt down, and prayed God to bless her; for which action these poor men were turned out of their places the very next day.

Then she entered the gloomy prison, and its doors were closed and its heavy bolts barred upon her: and there she was, where her mother had been before her, just before she was put to death by her cruel husband's orders. Yet she did not give way to fear, but prayed that she might "build her house upon the rock."

In the mean while, Queen Mary was desirous of marrying Philip, the King of Spain, a Papist as well as herself. The people of England, in general, did not at all like this match. They had no wish to return to Popery, having become extremely attached to many of their new preachers, and being very thankful for the liberty of having the Scriptures in English, and English prayers and sermons.

Some of the old noblemen of the kingdom, however, and some of the people, and all the old bishops and monks who had been turned out of their offices by Cranmer, were, of course, anxious to bring in Popery, their own religion, again; and

now Cranmer, and Latimer, and Ridley, and other Protestant bishops and clergymen, were sent to the Tower, and Popish bishops put in their places.

Elizabeth herself remained shut up in the Tower: and it was not till she had been a month under close confinement that leave was given her to walk in the royal apartments, and afterwards in a small garden, closely guarded, no one being allowed to speak to her, or even to look at her.

There was a little child of five years old belonging to one of the officers of the Tower, whom she was glad to notice. He liked to come and see her, and used to bring her a nosegay of flowers every day; but the keepers were ordered not to admit him, and the child peeping through a hole in the door as she walked in the garden, next day, cried out, "Mistress, I can bring you no more flowers!"

After three months had passed away, Queen Mary finding it was impossible to fasten any accusation upon her, and being really afraid of stirring up enmity against herself by further harsh measures, deemed it most prudent to remove her from the Tower, but still by no means to place her at liberty: and Mary fixed upon Lord Williams and Sir Henry Beddingfield, two of her very devoted servants, to take charge of her sister, and keep her either at their own country *seats*, or at some one of the royal mansions.

Sir Henry Beddingfield behaved in a very *harsh, insolent* manner, when he came to remove

Elizabeth; and, not knowing what was going to be done with her, the poor lady was in the greatest terror, and sending for her gentleman-usher, and the rest of her people, she begged them to pray for her, for she believed she was to die this night. The attendants were much affected at her distress, and going to Lord Williams, entreated him to tell them if any harm was intended her. He assured them there was not.

Yet still Beddingfield continued his rough and brutal behaviour. It was intended, as she now found, to send her a prisoner to Woodstock, and, on the road, if any of the people ventured to shew her any little kindness, her sour keeper called them traitors and rebels; and when they set the bells ringing, as she passed through the villages, he desired the ringers might be put into the stocks.

On the third evening of her journey, the Lady Elizabeth arrived at Ricot, the house of Lord Williams, whose conduct was in every respect different from that of Beddingfield. He treated her as a royal guest, not as a prisoner, and invited some people of rank to meet her. This indulgence extremely annoyed Sir Henry Beddingfield; he made his soldiers keep strict watch, and insisted upon it, that no one of the guests should remain at night in the house. He also took Lord Williams severely to task for his entertainment of the queen's prisoner: but the good host replied that he well knew what he was doing, and that "her grace might, and should, in his house, be merry."

Beddingfield, however, knew Queen Mary's intentions better than Lord Williams did; for no sooner did her Majesty know how kindly and hospitably Elizabeth had been received at Ricot, than she sent directions for her being immediately removed to Woodstock. There Beddingfield managed as he pleased. No visitor ever came near: the doors were closed, and soldiers kept watch over her by day and by night.

It is said, that a little while after this, "she, hearing upon a time, out of her garden at Woodstock, a milkmaid singing pleasantly, wished herself a milkmaid too, saying, that her case was better, and her life merrier than hers."

At length, after long delays, Queen Mary was married to King Philip of Spain, who came over to England, and spent some time here. King Philip hoped either to succeed to the English throne himself, or to be able to leave it to his heirs, and was therefore very anxious to dispose of Elizabeth that she might be no longer in the way of his designs; and this led him to propose to his wife that her sister should marry a foreign prince, the Duke of Savoy, who had come over with him to England.

Mary was extremely pleased with the idea, and, determined to try what flattery would do, she and King Philip invited Elizabeth to come to them at Hampton-Court, to share in their Christmas revels. There *she*, who had been so long a prisoner, and removed from all the gaities of the court, was feasted and entertained in the most candid manner. There were suppers, and tour-

naments, and spectacles, and King Philip treated her with every mark of respect.

But no sooner did Elizabeth learn what it was they wished her to do, than she gave a decided refusal. She did not choose to be Duchess of Savoy; and she told King Philip, as she had before told her sister, that she would not be persuaded to marry him. Still they persisted in urging the match upon her, and she left London in disgrace with both.

As Elizabeth is a more interesting character than poor Mary, and her reign was afterwards a very remarkable one, I have told you the more about her history.

And, indeed, there is no pleasure, and a great deal of pain in reading English history during the reign of Queen Mary. I have no intention of telling you the sad tale of all the burnings and persecutions of the Protestants: how some of the wisest and best men in the land were put to a cruel death, because they would not again return to Popery, and how Cranmer himself, together with Ridley and Latimer, were burned in ~~Smith-~~
field. Oxford

It was a fierce and terrible time; but though Queen Mary did not intend to make her subjects Protestants, it is certain that many more people became so in her reign than in that of Edward, in consequence of the horror they felt at these cruelties, and the firmness of the martyrs who died in defence of their principles.

By the time Mary had reigned five years, her health declined very fast. She was not a happy



Burning of Bishops in Smithfield.

woman. She knew she was not beloved by her people, nor by her husband, to whom she was, herself, much attached. Her heart was broken; but as her end drew near, she became more kindly disposed towards her sister Elizabeth, and whenever they met or exchanged letters, it was with more affection than formerly. Mary well knew that Elizabeth would succeed her in the throne, as she had herself no children, and King Philip was assured of the same. The hopelessness, therefore, of keeping her any longer in the background was plain to both of them.

From this time, then, they treated her well, and when the days of Mary's unhappy life were ended, Elizabeth found herself freed from all the depression under which she had suffered, and at liberty to mount her father's throne.

ELIZABETH.—THE FIFTH TUDOR.
1558—1603.

There was much joy in the hearts of many people at Elizabeth's accession. Not only the Protestant party welcomed her, but the more moderate Papists, who had been much shocked by the cruelties of Mary's reign, and who extremely disliked King Philip, were thankful to have a change.



Queen Elizabeth.

The London citizens did not know how to contain their joy: they rang the bells, they lighted up bonfires, and they ate and they drank prosperity to Queen Elizabeth; and when she drew near the capital (for she was absent from it at the time of her sister's death) crowds came out to welcome her.

She might well be pleased with the zeal of these people, for she could remember that in trouble and disgrace they had not deserted her; they had even then shewed their hearts were with her. She proceeded on, and reached the Tower, which was a royal dwelling, as well as a prison,

and it was customary for the sovereign to make it one of his first dwelling-places. But Queen Elizabeth did not now enter it by the Traitor's Gate; nor was she forbidden any pleasant recreation.

Sports, and feastings, and revels, were provided for her, and all expected with impatience the day of her coronation.

It came on the 15th of January 1559, just three months after the death of Mary; but it was not so much the coronation, it was the splendid water-procession attending her majesty from her palace in Westminster to the Tower, and afterwards her passage back through the city, which interested the people.



Elizabeth's Barge passing along the Thames.

It was a beautiful sight to see the broad river Thames covered with gay barges, filled with splendidly dressed ladies and gentlemen, and rowed by rowers in showy liveries of various colours and fancies. Elizabeth no longer set

herself against the passion for dress. She was always richly adorned herself, and liked to see all around her look gay and bright. So they glided along the river, to the sound of pleasant melody.

Then followed her passage through the city, when she rode in a sumptuous chariot, with trumpeters and heralds before, and lords, and ladies, and gentlemen of every degree, beside and behind her.



Elizabeth's Passage through the City.

In general, Elizabeth preferred riding on horseback, (though on this occasion she departed from her custom,) and when she rode she was always attended by a number of ladies splendidly habited, on horseback also: as they gathered round her apparelled in crimson velvet, or cloth of gold, (with which their horses were also adorned,) they must have made a goodly spectacle.

While the queen thus shewed herself to her faithful subjects, they took care to do their best

in entertaining her majesty in return. In different parts of the city, different shows were exhibited, and the Recorder presented her in Cheapside with a purse containing a thousand marks of gold. There was also a great deal of speech-making, both in Latin and English, to which Elizabeth replied very courteously, and many a nosegay did she receive from hands too poor to offer any other present.

And now, when the people had given her this glad welcome, [was it not a thing to anger and vex *them*, as well as the queen herself, that all the bishops refused to put the crown upon her head? They were Queen Mary's bishops, who, no doubt, dreaded the return of a Protestant government; and it was not without some difficulty that one of them, the Bishop of Carlisle, consented to brave the anger of his brethren, and perform the ceremony.

The day after her coronation, a singular petition was presented to her by one of her Protestant courtiers. You must know that it was the custom to release some prisoners upon the accession of a new sovereign: and this petition was to pray that there might be four or five more released: namely, the four Evangelists, and the Apostle Paul, who, the petition said, had long been shut up in a foreign tongue, as it were in prison; so that they could not converse with the common people.

The queen heard the petition, but answered very gravely, that it was best first to enquire of themselves whether they wished to be released,



Elizabeth receiving a Petition.

or no. She did, however, immediately authorize the reading the Liturgy in English; but she forbade for a while public preaching: and many of the Protestants were disappointed to find that she was not inclined to depart as far from Popery as they wished.

And now, Elizabeth's first parliament assembled; and one of the first things the Commons did, was to move an address to her majesty, recommending her to marry. Elizabeth thanked them, but made no direct answer: she had already refused the hand of King Philip, who, almost as soon as her sister Mary was dead, had sent her an embassy on purpose to solicit her favour; but she knew him by far too well to think for a moment of marrying him. And the nation rejoiced in her decision, though her refusal was the occasion of great anger and enmity on the part of the King of Spain.

Many were the great and wise men who gathered about the queen, and did faithful service to her, as ministers, as clergymen, and as defenders of their country by sea and land. So that the English throne never stood more firmly, and never, perhaps, was so highly respected at home and abroad, as now, when it was filled only by a woman. She had the wisdom to choose and keep excellent counsellors about her, and she never failed to attend to their advice in all matters of importance.

She had many very pleasant ways about her, which made her much thought of among the people. She used very often to make what were called *progresses* (or journeys) into different parts of the country, visiting the different towns and country places, and hearing the complaints and petitions of people of all sorts; and as, wherever she went, there were sure to be splendid revels and shows, these progresses brought much entertainment to the poor.

But it must be owned that the expence of entertaining her fell very heavy upon the nobles at whose houses she visited, and the towns through which she passed. She constantly travelled accompanied by a vast train of lords, ladies, and gentlemen, foreign ambassadors and their servants, all of whom were to be feasted and lodged. A few days' visit from the queen was therefore a ruinous affair to all who were not extremely rich; and it was observed, that though Elizabeth was always willing to receive presents, she did not give much in return, nor did she ever think


of repaying her hosts for the heavy charges the entertainment of her household entailed upon them.

The poorer and middle ranks of people did not suffer from this meanness of hers, but rather the contrary, because she did not burden them with any new tax to support her extravagance. But the courtiers, who were constantly expected to present her with costly New Year's Gifts, besides many valuable contributions to her private purse, were very weary of her covetous grasping spirit.

The bishops and nobles gave her purses full of gold and silver pieces; they also sent her jewels, robes, and even sets of linen. Nothing came amiss to Queen Elizabeth, and she certainly grew more greedy as she grew older.

She had also some very foolish and absurd points, quite unworthy of one, who in many respects was so wise. She was very vain of her beauty and youth, and was ready to take in any flattery that was offered her; even so far as that, during the latter part of her reign, when much advanced in years, she wanted still to pass for a young and beautiful woman; and people who came to see her on business, would find her dancing, or amusing herself in some girlish way.

Then, not content with remaining single herself, she wanted to keep all her women, and as many of her courtiers as she could, from marrying also: she once was unjust enough to send two of her servants to prison, because they thought proper to marry without her consent, knowing it was in vain to ask it.



She was also very passionate, and was accustomed to use the most harsh language towards those who offended her; and, on the other hand, she was sometimes far too partial to some very unworthy people, and could with difficulty be led to see how bad they really were.

There was one of these favourites, the Earl of Leicester, who, for a long time, stood much higher in her favour than he deserved: he was a bold, bad, ambitious man; but by flattering the queen, and entertaining her most sumptuously at his house at Kenilworth, he contrived to get very far



Elizabeth at Kenilworth.

into her good graces; and if it had not been for the earnest endeavours of some of her other counsellors, who were really good and able men, she might have been persuaded by him into some very wrong measures.

One of the best of her ministers was Cecil, Lord Burleigh. He was a prudent, honest, faith-

ful servant to her, and, happily for her, he lived nearly to the end of her reign. Many others also she had of great worth in their different ways, who all helped to make her reign a glorious one: so many, indeed, that the time would fail me, if I were to number up the half of them. Her sea-captains were the bravest and most successful in the world, and when they were not employed in her defence, she sent them out to make discoveries. One of them, Sir Francis Drake, was the first commander who ever sailed completely round the world: another went to Greenland: and another made his way round the coast of Norway and Lapland, to Archangel on the White Sea, and opened a trade in that direction with Russia in furs and skins.

Then some of the finest poets and prose-writers of England lived and wrote during Elizabeth's reign. Particularly Spenser and Shakspeare, and also Sir Walter Raleigh, and Sir Philip Sydney, who was a warrior, as well as writer.

And though the queen was, as I have said, sometimes mistaken in those whom she favoured, she never, knowingly, promoted any very bad man to office: she required from all about her, that they should be careful of their behaviour, and as far as possible do what was just and honourable to their fellow-creatures.

But she often, according to the fashion of those times, set herself to judge and punish her subjects for their religious opinions. She was very severe indeed towards some of the Catholics, and still more so towards those among the Protestants

who went too far away, as she thought, from Popery. Some were burned, and some had their hands cut off, or were sent to prison by her judges, or at the order of her spiritual courts.

But the worst part of her conduct was that towards Mary Queen of Scots. England and Scotland had still separate governments; but Scotland, being much the weaker of the two, its wisest sovereigns were glad to connect themselves in a friendly way with England, and to ensure so powerful a protector by every means.

Mary, the present Queen of Scotland, was the presumptive heir to Queen Elizabeth's throne; and it was to be expected, that Mary should look anxiously towards England, and dread, lest Elizabeth should, after all, marry, and have children of her own, in which case, there would no longer be any chance of her own succeeding to the crown.

Elizabeth, on her part, was childishly jealous of Mary, who was a most beautiful, graceful, and captivating woman; and she was ready, much too ready, to believe every evil report that was brought in respecting her. Mary had been married very young to the French king's son, who died and left her a widow: she afterwards married an English nobleman, nearly related to the queen, and this gave fresh offence to Elizabeth. Up to this time, the blame of their disagreements seems to have rested chiefly with the Queen of England.

But Mary's conduct after this was calculated to give serious offence to her friends as well as

enemies. She did not live happily with her husband, and many people suspected that she was, at least, not wholly ignorant of a plot to ensnare and murder him. It is nearly impossible to say whether these suspicions were rightly founded or not; but her conduct altogether was not such as to make her name respected, and some of her subjects rose in rebellion against her. They fought a battle with her partizans and defeated them, taking many prisoner; and when they had done this, they proclaimed her infant son king, and one of their own party regent over him.



Lochleven Castle.

Then they confined Queen Mary in the Castle of Lochleven, which stood on a little island in the middle of a lake; but, after having been shut up for some time there, some of her friends contrived an escape for her, and drawing together as many as they could of her party, they set themselves

against the regent. But here they were again defeated, and Mary was obliged to flee for her life. Then she bethought herself of the English queen; and though she had never received much kindness from her, she could not think it possible that Elizabeth would refuse her an honourable reception, when she, the lawful Queen of Scotland, was driven by her own subjects out of her kingdom.

No other home seemed so naturally to offer itself, as England; and, accordingly, thither Queen Mary went. She proceeded no further however than Carlisle, without writing to Elizabeth, earnestly imploring her favour and protection. As soon as Elizabeth received the letter, she sent down one of her noble ladies and two gentlemen to attend Mary at Carlisle, and also wrote to her in terms of condolence on her misfortunes; but she refused to admit the Queen of Scots into her presence, till she should have cleared herself of the shocking charge of being her husband's murderer.

If Queen Elizabeth had gone no further than this, she would have been wise. There was no necessity for her to bring Queen Mary to trial, or to sit in judgment upon her. It would have been far more merciful and kind to have refused her an asylum in England altogether, rather than to make herself a party to proceedings against her.

Instead of acting in this way, she had the *baseness* to imprison the woman who, confiding in her honour, had come to put herself into her power. She sent her under a strong guard to

Bolton Castle in Yorkshire; would not permit her to have any intercourse with her Scotch friends; and, what was still worse, by many false promises, enticed her to consent to an English trial.

But it was not on account of any thing which was proved against her before the commission, that Queen Mary was condemned. It was on account of various intrigues in which she gradually became engaged while a prisoner in England: some of which were plots for her own escape only; some for her marriage to the Duke of Norfolk, in case she *did* escape; one for bringing in an invasion of Spaniards into the country; and, lastly, she was accused of having concurred in a plot for the assassination of Elizabeth herself.

These charges might all be true. Mary was not a woman of principle, and would, probably, not have been scrupulous about the means of escape. She justly regarded Elizabeth as having behaved to her in the basest manner; repaying her confidence with treachery and cruelty; and, therefore, she considered every act of hers as but an act of self-defence. For all these plots Elizabeth had only herself to thank: she had brought them upon herself by undertaking the confinement and trial of the Queen of Scots.

But the meanest part of Elizabeth's conduct was to come. She wanted to have the credit of tenderness and generosity towards the unhappy woman whom she had treated so basely. She made fine speeches to the parliament, expressing her wish that some method might be found by

which the Queen of Scots' life might be saved. At the same time, when the Scotch ambassador begged a delay of only eight days, she refused. Nothing seems to have stayed her but the dread of being accounted unjust or severe in the eyes of the world.

At length, she signed the warrant for Mary's execution, and gave it to the secretary, (Davison,) to get it sealed with the great seal, desiring him also to tell another minister what she had done. Next day she sent however for Davison, and told him not to carry it for signature without further orders, and talked in a very hesitating manner about it.

Davison told her it was signed already; and when he left her, he went to Burleigh and several of the other ministers to know what they were to do. They persuaded him to leave the warrant with them, saying, they would be answerable for it.

The queen had, before this, said that she begged she might not be troubled with any of the particulars of the execution, and, putting all things together, Burleigh and the rest were so certain that she meant *them* to have the warrant executed, that they did not hesitate in sending it down, in consequence of which, Mary was beheaded a week after the queen had signed it.



Mary Queen of Scots beheaded.

But when Elizabeth was informed that the Queen of Scots was really no more, she threw herself into the most violent fits of anger and apparent sorrow. She said her ministers had committed a crime never to be forgiven; that they had, without her knowledge, put to death *her dear sister*.

She put on deep mourning, and, for some days, would not suffer any one to approach her. Still worse than this, she tried to throw the whole blame upon poor Davison.

She sent him to the Tower, stripped him of his office, and subjected him to trial in the star-chamber, where no one ever had a *fair* trial; there he was found guilty, and sentenced to pay a fine of ten thousand marks, and be imprisoned during the queen's pleasure, though all the judges agreed in expressing a high opinion of his honour and integrity.



Elizabeth mourning for the Death of Mary Queen of Scots.

This poor man soon after wrote an apology for himself, by which, as well as by other evidence, it is clearly proved that Elizabeth *did* mean the execution to take place, though it may be true that she expected to have been again applied to about it; for that, two or three days after she signed the warrant, she sent for Davison, and said, she had dreamed that the Queen of Scots was dead, which had much disturbed her; and that with great earnestness he *then* asked her whether she did not intend the matter should go forward? To which, she answered vehemently that she did; but that “*this mode would cast all the blame on herself,*” &c.

And now, if you are not too much disgusted with the history of Queen Elizabeth to go on, I must tell you what befell King Philip, who, ever since she rejected him as a husband, had been trying to ruin her and England. At length, in

1557, it began to be known that he had prepared a very large fleet of ships, which he called, "The Invincible Armada," and that he fully intended to invade Elizabeth's kingdom, and to win back England to the religion of the Pope.

As soon as this was clearly known, the English spirit was roused, and the people flew to arms every where, begging the queen to accept of their money or their services to keep out the Spaniard from their coasts, and an army was quickly collected, as also a fleet commanded by Sir Francis Drake.



Elizabeth at Tilbury Fort.

The queen went herself to Tilbury Fort to see the soldiers reviewed, and she rode from rank to rank on a noble charger, with a general's truncheon in her hand, a corslet of polished steel, and a white-plumed helmet; but better than her looks were the warm and kind words she addressed to her people.

The Invincible Armada did indeed leave Spain and reach the coast of England; but a terrible storm, joined to the efforts of the English fleet, prevented its doing any injury. One great vessel after another was wrecked, and its crew drowned; some were taken prisoners, and not half the ships were ever seen in the ports of Spain again.

The rejoicings on this occasion were great indeed. On the queen's birth-day there was a grand, general festival all over the country; thanksgivings were offered in the churches, and the queen went in state to St. Paul's to offer up her devotions to the Great Being who had preserved the kingdom from such danger.

A very short time after this, Elizabeth lost her favourite, the Earl of Leicester, who died, leaving a very bad name behind. He had a son-in-law, the Earl of Essex, to whom, after his death, the queen became as partial as she had been to Leicester. He was a proud, very bold, ambitious young man, and so rash and fool-hardy, that he was quite unfit to serve the nation in any important matter; but, still, he was much better than Leicester: he was generous, lofty-minded, honest, and at times deeply impressed by religious feelings.

His lot was a very hard one: for though, had he possessed more discretion and humility, he might have always remained high in the queen's favour, he had some crafty, cold-blooded enemies at court, who, on the one hand, spurred him on to provoke Elizabeth, and, on the other,

made the worst of his conduct in speaking of him to the queen.

Queen Elizabeth's pride and vanity were yet greater than her partialities for her favourites, and therefore it was very easy to make her violently angry with those she loved, by telling her of hasty and affronting speeches which they had let fall among their friends in confidence; and, as poor Essex was as proud as she was, he was sure to take fire whenever she resented his conduct. His high spirit could not brook the manner in which she treated him. Once matters went so far that the queen, forgetting her dignity, gave him a box on the ear, and bade him "go and be hanged," which enraged him most violently.

These quarrels were very often made up; but still, as Essex grew more haughty, and the queen more sour through age and declining strength, it was plain to all that the favourite would do something at last which would provoke his royal mistress beyond the bounds of pardon.

And so it was. Essex was at length sent to prison: again he was set free. But, meantime, he had gone a great way in a plot to bring in the young King of Scotland, the son of Mary, and dethrone Elizabeth in her old age. The plot was discovered, and Essex and his associates were shortly after put to death.

Though Elizabeth had been a hypocrite in her grief for the Queen of Scots, it is quite certain she was not so in her sorrow for Essex. She would, with all her heart, have spared him, and nothing



Earl of Essex beheaded.

but the belief that her own life and kingdom were in danger while he lived would have induced her to sign the warrant for his death.

In spite of all his follies and treason, she was deeply attached to him, and not without reason, for Essex had many very fine qualities; and the queen never recovered from the grief she felt at his death.

She was the more afflicted, because, some time after he was no more, the Countess of Nottingham, a relation of Essex, being on her death-bed, sent for her to disclose a secret, which she said was on her conscience; and, when the queen came, she produced a ring which Elizabeth well remembered having given Lord Essex, with a promise that whatever circumstances he might be in, if he would send it to her, she would either pardon him, or at least admit him to her presence.

Now Essex had given this ring to the countess, begging her to take it to the queen; but the countess having told her husband, he had persuaded her not to do so, for he himself was an enemy of Essex. The queen meanwhile had been expecting the ring, and she was angry at Essex's pride in not condescending to use it.

As soon as she had heard the countess's confession, she was transported with rage and grief, and shaking the dying countess in her bed, she flung out of the chamber, saying that God might forgive her, but she never could.



Elizabeth and the Countess of Nottingham.

It was then that Queen Elizabeth ceased to find any more pleasure and pride in the things of this world. She drooped her head in sorrow, and gave vent to floods of tears; nor could she be persuaded to take food or medicine.

Her long reign of glory ended in sadness; and

they who saw her now, and remembered her happiest days, could not but feel how poor a thing is earthly glory, and how sad it was that *She*, who had been the pride and stay of England, should be sunk in dejection and unable to find peace.

And yet they were, towards the last, cheered to find that she found comfort in prayer; and that when she was unable herself to speak, she made signs that her chaplains and those around her should pray for her.

And they did so to the last; and she continually made signs that she was sensible, and joined with them. Thus she passed away, early in the morning of Thursday the 24th of March 1603.

Should you ever visit Westminster Abbey, amid all the noble and affecting things which will fix your eye, do not omit to let it rest on the tomb of Queen Elizabeth. It is a lofty, magnificent monument, but the painting and gilding are not suitable to the place nor the occasion.

Turn then, and look at another. There lies Elizabeth's rival, the unhappy Queen of Scots. Death has brought them near, and there is no rivalry in the tomb.

As you look at the graves of the first and last Tudor, you can think over some of the mighty changes which had taken place between the time when Henry the Seventh mounted the throne and the death of Elizabeth.

I have already spoken of the most important of all, the Reformation of Religion, and I will now mention some other movements among the people.

I mentioned, in writing of the first Tudor, Henry the Seventh, that female education was greatly advanced, Sir Thomas More and several other fathers of families having set the example. The invention of printing, as far as it had prevailed in England, did not contribute much to the improvement of the English till a little later period than this; at least, not much had been effected by the printing of *English* books, Caxton having chiefly printed romances and extravagant notions.

It is probable therefore that the learned languages were taught to females at this time, principally because in no other way could they obtain any great mental improvement. The Romish religion also greatly promoted acquaintance with Latin literature.

But in the reign of Elizabeth good English writers poured in apace; and after that period we do not hear so much of learned ladies, though we find that the love and knowledge of general literature were far more widely diffused.

It appears that in the Tudor reigns young ladies used to learn needlework, and tapestry, and good breeding, by going into families of higher rank than their own, paying for their board.

In like manner, the noble and gentle youths of England were educated in the families of great men; and when we read of the immense establishments of servants in the houses of Morton, and Cardinal Wolsey, we must remember that many of these were young men, placed there by their parents for education.

Thus, Sir Thomas More served an apprenticeship under the Chancellor Morton. He waited at his master's table, carried his train, and performed many inferior offices; but in these services the young men saw before them the best models in courtly manners, and had opportunities of listening to the best conversation.

There was a distinction made between them and the menial servants: they had always a table to themselves, and were waited upon after they had done service at their patron's table.

A great change took place in the behaviour of parents towards their children, after the Reformation.

An old writer says, "The gentry and citizens were as severe towards their children (before this time) as schoolmasters, and schoolmasters as the masters of the house of correction: the child perfectly loathed the sight of his parents as the slave his torture.

"Gentlemen of thirty and forty years old were used to stand like mutes and fools, bare-headed, before their parents; and the daughters (grown women) were to stand at the cupboard side during the whole time of the mother's visit, unless, forsooth, leave was desired that a cushion might be given them to kneel upon, brought them by the serving man, after they had done sufficient penance by standing."*

The arts, painting, music, and architecture,

* John Aubrey.

were warmly patronized by Henry the Eighth. He it was, who, on Sir Thomas More's recommendation, caused Hans Holbein to paint his portrait and the portraits of very many of his courtiers.

Music he well understood, and even composed several pieces. In his reign many beautiful buildings of the religious kind were indeed laid waste, and, where not destroyed, they were made ready for destruction: but we must still remember him as the founder of Trinity College, Cambridge; the completer of King's College Chapel, at the same university; and of Henry the Seventh's Chapel, Westminster Abbey.

Many noble private houses were built during the Tudor reigns, and they were furnished in a stately and splendid fashion. There, gaudy coloured tapestries decorated the walls, and abundance of gilding, with rich displays of plate, graced the rooms.

In the times of Henry the Seventh and his son, the favourite mansion was something between a castle and a private dwelling: there were generally a moat and gateway, and one or two strong turrets; but they were not well fitted to stand a siege. One of these is Wingfield Manor-House in Derbyshire.

In Queen Elizabeth's time, the tapestry was giving way to an abundance of fine oak or chestnut carving, as is shewn at Hardwicke and other old places of that time.

In the times of Edward the Sixth, of Mary, and Elizabeth, the meals were generally served as



Wingfield Manor-House.

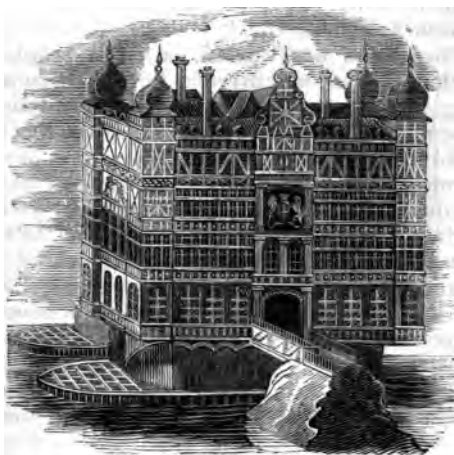
follows:—breakfast, consisting, at the tables of the great, of butter and eggs, broiled beef-steaks, and a cup of ale at eight or nine o'clock.

Dinner at eleven, supper between five and six o'clock.

Dining with hats on was usual; they were only taken off when grace was said.

As they dined so early, much public business was transacted after dinner; and the parks of London were gay and crowded at that time of the day.

The city of London, of course, increased in size and splendour during the Tudor reigns; but the streets were for the most part too narrow and crowded. London Bridge in the time of *Elizabeth* received several additions to the buildings *which* already occupied it. The most curious *among these* buildings was the famous *Nonesuch*

*Swan Theatre.*

Swan Theatre. So called, because it was constructed in Holland, entirely of wood, and brought over in pieces, and was then put up on London Bridge, with wooden pegs only, not a single nail being used.

The whole of the front was ornamented with profusion of casement windows with carved wooden galleries and richly sculptured wooden annels.

I have already mentioned the number of fine writers who lived in the time of Queen Elizabeth. Let me now tell you that the first newspaper ever published in England, came out in her reign,

at the time when the nation was in peril from the Spanish Armada.

When news was wanted, or when people in London wanted to advertise for any person or thing they desired to have, it was usual to go or send to St. Paul's Cathedral, which was the grand mart for all the intelligence.

Indeed, when we read the accounts of all the plottings, the cheatings, the iniquities of various kinds which were constantly going on in "Paul's walk," as a part of this building was called, we can hardly help thinking of the language of Him who said, "My house shall be called a house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves."

THE STUARTS.

JAMES I. 1603--1649.

Queen Elizabeth was the fifth and last Tudor sovereign of England; but James Stuart, the King of Scotland, who was now king, bore an ancient relationship to this family, his great-grandmother being the daughter of Henry the Seventh.

James was thirty-seven years of age at the time of his being called to the English throne. He had married Ann, daughter of the King of Denmark, and had by her three children.

These he left for a time in Scotland when first called on to go to England. It was not a plea-

sant day to the Scotch people when he took his departure; except during the reign of Edward the First, they had never been without a sovereign at their own capital city; but from this time they had no longer a king residing among them.


When James arrived in London, he very soon shewed that he had no great respect for the late queen, or any of her counsellors. It was no wonder that he should feel displeased with her conduct towards his mother; but to hold her cheap as a sovereign was no proof of his own good sense.

As soon as his queen arrived from Scotland, and notwithstanding that the plague was raging dreadfully in London, there was a grand coronation, a very different one from that of Queen Elizabeth, who, you may remember, could not persuade more than one bishop to place the crown on her head.

But now there was a full attendance of them all, and it was a splendid ceremony; and the queen by her pleasant manner towards the people, speaking to them as she passed, and receiving their prayers with thanks, made herself popular among them.

This was the more welcome, because James was not at all courteous or kind in his manner in public. He seemed afraid of the people; and indeed it was well known that he was so timid as to dread the approach of any stranger lest harm should be designed him.

Yet with all *that*, he had so high an idea of what was due to him as a king, that he seemed



to think every thing in England was to be ruled according to his own judgment, and to forget that parliaments were as much a part of the English constitution as he himself was.

Two years after King James came to the English crown, the famous Gunpowder Plot was discovered.

The history of this wicked transaction is this. There was a gentleman named Catesby, a bigoted, bitter Papist, who had long held traitorous counsels with some foreign priests of like mind with himself.

To this man's mind it occurred that some great blow which should deprive England of a Protestant government, and throw the whole nation into alarm, would prepare the way for bringing in Popery once again.

Day and night he turned it over in his restless thought, till on a sudden it darted into his mind that the king, and lords, and commons, would all be met together under one roof on the day of the opening of parliament. Could not the blow be struck then?

But again,—how was it to be done? It would not do to fall upon them openly with arms in their hands: there would be no chance of success so. Then there came to him the wicked and horrible thought of laying a train of gunpowder under the floor of the parliament-house, setting fire to it, and so blowing up the king and all the assembled peers and commons.

A good many Catholics, some English, some foreign, were concerned more or less in this plot;

and it was a year and half before any opportunity occurred for executing it; but in the mean while Catesby and his associates had hired the vaults under the parliament-house, which just at that time were empty.


They had first taken a house next to the parliament-house, not knowing that they could have the vaults, in which coals were generally kept. On finding this, however, one of the party was employed to hire them, and there they lodged barrels of gunpowder.

They also engaged a man of the name of Guy Fawkes to set fire to the train when every thing should be ready.

At length, the time drew near. On the fifth of November the king was to open parliament: the queen, the Prince of Wales, and the whole court were to be there; and all these persons, whether innocent or guilty, were to be put to death by an unseen hand in a moment.

This terrible stroke was not permitted to be given. There was a lord among those to be destroyed, who had a friend, some say a sister, among the plotters; and a letter was written by this friend, strongly advising this lord not to go to the parliament.

The letter was a very dark, perplexing one. Something was said about a sudden blow that was to be struck, and nobody was to see the hand that gave it. Lord Montague, who received it, could not tell what to make of it, no name being given; and he thought it best to shew it to King James and the council.



King James and one of the lords of the council were both struck with the words in the letter about an unseen blow, and Lord Suffolk was ordered to make a very strict search in the vaults and buildings near the parliament-house.

There they found Guy Fawkes with a dark lantern in his hand, and they soon discovered the barrels of gunpowder.

They found in Guy Fawkes's pocket, matches and flints for striking fire; and, when he saw there was no escape, he mentioned the names of some of the authors of the plot.



Guy Fawkes.

Several of them were immediately taken, but others concealed themselves about the country, and were not discovered for some time afterwards. Catesby and two others were killed in the attempt to take them prisoners, and some were almost starved in their hiding-places.

You would have supposed that this plot was confined to desperate, ignorant, wicked men; but there certainly was one man, at least, among those concerned in it, who on all other occasions had proved himself a noble, knightly, generous character, but was so carried away by bigotry and false religion as to think this shocking deed as an act of praise-worthy zeal.

This man was called Sir Everard Digby. He died, however, deeply penitent, and convinced of the wickedness of the intended act.

You remember the name of *Danes*:—of those invaders of England who gave Alfred the Great so much trouble. And I have told you that James's wife was a Dane, daughter of the King of Denmark.

Some years after the coronation, the queen's father and mother came to see her, and were very handsomely entertained.

The Danish king was a lover of good cheer, and while he stayed in England, which was a month, there was nothing but drinking, feasting, juggling, hunting, and such like; so much so, that the more sober English were quite ashamed.

King James's eldest son was named Henry. He had been early placed under the care of the Earl of Mar and his lady, both very worthy people, and when he was six years old had a learned tutor; afterwards, the king, who was a good scholar, superintended his education, and spared no pains to give him instruction.

Henry was a very clever, animated, spirited boy, and, better than all this, appears to have

had a devout mind. He could not endure the habit of profane swearing, which was so common with his father and the court, and on one occasion exclaimed, "All the pleasure in the world is not worth an oath."

He was of a very honest, upright mind, and very quick-sighted; so much so, that he soon discerned the bad character of one of his father's favourites, the Earl of Rochester, and could hardly repress his indignation at seeing his promotion.

But this fine promising youth was suddenly taken ill of a putrid fever, of which he died, to the great grief of the whole nation, just as he had attained his nineteenth year.

And now his brother Charles was made Prince of Wales, and, besides these two princes, King James had a daughter, married to a German potentate.

King James was himself a zealous Protestant, and there was nothing he relished better than arguing with the different religious parties of that time. We are indebted to him for our present translation of the Holy Scriptures; and the large circulation of the Bible in his reign, was the greatest blessing he conferred on his subjects.

But there were many of the Protestants whose religious views differed much from those of the king,—who thought the Church still retained too many of the ceremonies of the Romish Church, and who did not like the use of the Book of Common Prayer so well as prayers uttered by their own ministers in their own chapels.

These men were in those times generally called Puritans. They were a severe, but devout set of men, thoroughly in earnest in their principles, for the most part, and greatly scandalized at the habits of profane swearing and irreverent jesting common to the king and some of his favourites.

They were inclined to be too scrupulous and precise in small matters; but they were often highly conscientious, and were grieved more especially to find that the king had some thoughts of marrying his son Charles to the sister of the King of Spain, who was a Papist.

And this grief was not confined to the Puritans only, for many of the sober Protestant church-people were shocked at the dangers of this marriage.

They knew that the Spanish court would interfere in the religion and politics of England; and that the princess sent to be the wife of Charles must have Catholic priests and attendants of her own, and that her children would probably be early brought up to follow this religion.

Therefore, when King James called a parliament, they begged and entreated him to take care what he was doing, and to let the prince be married to one of his own religion.

James was extremely angry at this interference of his parliament. He, unfortunately, thought that it would be doing himself and his son a dishonour if Charles were to marry any but the daughter of one of the principal sovereigns of Europe, and as *they* were all Catholic, his love

of Protestantism was obliged to give way to his vanity.

His behaviour to the parliament, which had on this occasion given him the best and soundest counsel, was most tyrannical and unjust. He committed several of the members to prison; he tore with his own hand a paper, (which the House of Commons had drawn up protesting against his proceedings,) and then he dissolved the parliament.

And now came sad proceedings. As the king had dismissed the parliament, he could not get any money in the usual way, and thus he was tempted to extort it from his subjects in an unlawful manner.

This indeed he had too often done before; being a very bad manager of his cash, he had often been in distress for it.

The king's grand favourite, during all the latter years of his life, was one George Villiers, a very handsome youth, whom he had loaded with honours, and at last made Duke of Buckingham.

This man was ambitious and crafty, and seeing that the king was growing infirm, and falling into bad health, he determined to do all in his power to make himself of consequence to Prince Charles, so that whenever the father died, the son might continue to befriend him.

He thought it would assist him in his designs if he made himself useful and important in the affair of the prince's marriage; and one day he suddenly proposed to the young man to go over

without any previous notice to Spain and settle the matter for themselves on the spot.

The prince was pleased with the idea, and both he and Buckingham so earnestly importuned the king, that he consented, though not a little alarmed at the scheme; for he had sense to see, that when the Spanish court had the young man in their power, they would perhaps persuade him to consent to their own terms.


But all that James could say was over-ruled by his favourite Buckingham; a reluctant consent was gained, and the prince and the duke set off, disguised, that no one might know of their departure.

When they reached Madrid, the capital of Spain, they went first to the English ambassador's house. It was almost dark in the evening, and he was extremely surprised at their arrival.

But the King of Spain was soon told of it, and he came to see the prince, and paid him a great many compliments. Charles suited the Spaniards very well, for he was grave and decent in his manners; but they did not at all like the Duke of Buckingham, who was light and gay.

Soon they began to discuss the conditions of the marriage; and then it proved, as James had foreseen, that one difficulty arose after another, and it seemed likely that the prince would be kept in Spain very much longer than he had ever intended.

The Spanish court wished, in truth, to convert him to the Catholic faith, and they persisted in it that the young princess should not come to Eng-



land till the next spring, hoping to keep Charles there all that time. This, however, he positively refused.

They gave up the point, and all was made ready for the marriage and departure on the twenty-ninth of August. Just at this moment, to the surprise of the court, the prince gave notice in July that he must immediately return to England.

It seemed an extraordinary thing, but the King of Spain behaved in a very dignified and proper manner; nor did he seem in the least to suspect that the prince could mean to break a treaty he had so often and earnestly pressed forward.

It was therefore settled that the lady should follow in the spring, and Charles solemnly confirmed by oath the different articles of the treaty: many presents were given on both sides; and when the Prince of Wales left Madrid, it was with the love and regard of all his Spanish friends.

It is lamentable to find that all this was deceit; and that almost as soon as Charles was out of Spain, he expressed a dislike of the court and of the match, and sought pretexts for breaking it off.

The fact is believed to be, that Buckingham had made himself odious to the Spaniards, and found that if his master married the Spanish king's sister, he should not gain the point he *desired*; therefore he used all his influence over *Charles*, and persuaded him to break off the *match*.

The English nation, however, having always been averse to this marriage, rejoiced so heartily at its being given up, that the perfidy of Buckingham and the prince were hardly attended to; and the new parliament joyfully gave its judgment against continuing any treaty.

But it was soon found that they were not at all nearer such a marriage for the prince as Protestants would like than before; for now, another was proposed, and this was with the daughter of the French king, quite as strict a Catholic as the Spanish.

This marriage, however, King James did not live to bring to a conclusion. His health, long declining, gave way, and he died in the fifty-ninth year of his age, after reigning twenty-two years in England.

These years had been peaceful, and in many respects prosperous. The nation had gone on increasing in wealth and luxury; commerce had been extended; many voyages of discovery had been made; and books had been multiplied.

Few new books of merit appeared in any foreign language, which were not soon translated into English. We have already mentioned the great work, the translation of the Bible.

There were forty-seven translators employed, who were divided into six companies, each taking a portion of the Scriptures; and rules for their proceeding were drawn up by the king himself with great skill and prudence.

They were nearly three years employed on the work, and it did not appear in print until 1611.

You will perhaps be surprised at hearing of so many different translations of the Bible ; but you must bear in mind that the great changes which the English language underwent in the space of only a single half century, were sufficient to make this something more necessary.

From the time of James to our own period these alterations have not been of sufficient consequence to create any difficulty, though some of the words contained in this version are not now used in conversation or writing.

It is always considered as a very able translation, though not a faultless one, and the language is beautifully simple.

The king did not shew himself to be possessed by a narrow spirit on this great occasion, for he called in the aid of the Puritans to assist the Churchmen.

Though there was a great deal that was wrong in King James's government, he had the happiness of being served by some very excellent men ; among others by the good Bishop Andrews, who was one of the most Christian characters of the time.

Before he was made a bishop, he was Dean of Westminster, and it fell to his lot to superintend Westminster school. Besides seeing to the studies of the boys, he was so fond of their company, that he seldom took a walk into the country without having two or three of them with him.

He used to say, even to his dying day, that "to see the grass, the herbs, trees, cattle, the *earth* and all its creatures, was to him the great-

est recreation that could be;" and he delighted to encourage the same tastes in these youths.

Then, sometimes two or three times in a week, he would send for the upper scholars to his lodgings, and keep them several hours with him, helping them with their Greek and Hebrew; and never was he heard to utter a sharp word towards them.

He was kind to the poor, devout and charitable in the highest degree. This good man had King James raised to a bishopric, and never was one better bestowed: afterwards he was Bishop of Ely, and at last, Bishop of Winchester.

There were also Hooker and Hall, two fine writers and excellent men, who were among King James's bishops; and of private clergymen there were many of excellent renown, and of such fervent piety that no Puritans could possibly exceed them in sanctity of life and heart.

THE SECOND STUART.

CHARLES I. 1625—1648.

I am now coming to a melancholy history, painful alike to read and to write; but more especially trying to those who undertake to relate it, because the same story has been told in such a different manner by very excellent men, that it is

really difficult to find where each is right or wrong.

You will see by what was said of the Tudors, that the power of the kings of England was become very great indeed. A whispered word from the sovereign was sufficient, during the latter part of Henry the Seventh's and the whole of Henry the Eighth's reign, to take away the life of the proudest noble in the land.

No one was safe. Jurymen who had given a verdict according to their consciences, if that verdict did not please the king, were called up to the Star-chamber, (a very arbitrary court of justice which had grown up under the Tudors into power almost unknown before,) and there they received sentence of death, or fine, or imprisonment, without any means of appealing to a just and equal tribunal.

In order to meet this overgrown power, which was highly dangerous, there was now no band of nobles, as in John's reign, strong and united enough to stand between the king and people when it was necessary.

These nobles had been broken down, as we have seen in the Wars of the Roses, and by the extortions of Henry the Seventh; and, in truth, their fall must always be regarded as a blessing, since no country can have peace while there are in it a number of little princes ready to make war upon one another at all times, with their bands of followers.

But neither can a country be happy when all depends upon the will of a single person, except

so long as that person has virtue and wisdom enough to govern all its affairs with discretion, which, when we look at the vast difficulties of the work, it seems hardly reasonable to expect.

It was therefore well for England, that at the time we mention, towards the close of the Tudor reigns, the gentry and people of respectable education and station, perceiving how the old nobility failed to shield the nation from the too great power of the crown, began themselves to interpose, by means of the House of Commons.

This they did in a bold and courageous manner throughout the reign of King James. Indeed, they had, even then, if not too high an opinion of their own importance, which was indeed great, yet rather too consequential and haughty a way of shewing it.

And when Charles the First came to the throne, they went on exactly in the same spirit. They seemed to consider that the most important duty of a member of parliament was to assert parliamentary privileges.

Charles, on the other hand, considered it *his* part to maintain the privileges of the crown; and in defending *these*, he endeavoured to uphold and defend every usurped and tyrannical usage which had been built up by the Tudors, and which it was the grand aim of the parliament to overthrow.

The king was free from the vices which had degraded the private character of Henry the Eighth, and several of those kings who had reigned here in England as they pleased, and with little check to their will and pleasure.

But, unfortunately, being bent upon keeping for the crown all the power which it had possessed at a time when the other branches of the legislature were unable to cope with it, he was led, on several occasions, to be very insincere in his dealings with his people. He promised fairly, but evaded his promises whenever he could.

You will remember how the Duke of Buckingham persuaded him to give up the Spanish match, and that not long afterwards another plan was formed for marrying him to the daughter of the King of France.

This treaty proceeded with no interruption from the death of King James; and it was thought not a little unfeeling, that even the very morning after his father's decease, letters were dispatched about it, and that the marriage was celebrated by Charles's proxy in France, while the body was still lying in state before the funeral.

Henrietta, the new queen, did not, however, come to England till five weeks afterwards, when Charles met her at Dover, and conducted her to his palace at Whitehall. She was not much more than fifteen years of age, and very small in stature.

It was not at all with the good will of the parliament that their king was married to a Catholic princess; more particularly as there came with her a number of monks and a bishop, and a large train of attendants, all Catholics; and Henrietta was particularly ordered by her mother to do all she possibly could to convert her husband,

and bring back the English nation to the Romish faith.

Scarcely, however, was she landed, than that dreadful disorder, the Plague, broke out in London. The parliament sat, in consequence, at Oxford; and, while there, the accounts daily received of the ravages of this terrible scourge were most shocking.

In one week there died in London 5000 persons; in some families, master, and servants, and children, were all swept off; and such was the fear of infection, that people did not dare to receive any money from their neighbours without first putting it into a tub of water.

After some little time, when the accounts were better, and only 2500 died weekly, it is recorded that a judge had to go to Westminster Hall from Buckinghamshire: and that on his way through London he drove over streets which were all overgrown with grass and empty of people, and he and his company dined on the ground in Hyde Park on such provisions as they brought with them.

On the whole, the deaths were estimated at 100,000 in this fearful plague.

In the next year, the disease having stayed its ravages, it was proposed that the coronation of the king should take place; but the queen would not be crowned, because the ceremony was performed by a Protestant bishop.

There was, at this time, very little harmony between the king and queen, and it was plain that Charles was quite out of patience with the French attendants, who ruled their mistress in

every thing, and were continually putting her upon measures very offensive to the English nation.

Henrietta being young, and liking her own people and customs better than the English, was much to be pitied; but it was clear things could not go on thus, and one day the king being much provoked by these French ladies and gentlemen, turned them all away, and desired them to go back to France.

They were very angry at this: they scolded and cried, and the little queen broke the window in her passion; but it was all in vain, the king insisted upon it they should go; at the same time he behaved very handsomely to them, giving them all money and their full wages, in return for which they got possession of all the queen's wardrobe, except one old satin gown, which they returned her.

Then, as they still were unwilling to leave England, the king sent to say it was his pleasure they should at once depart, and that if they did not, his yeomen had orders to turn them out of Somerset House.

You may suppose what a commotion all this change made in the queen's household, when I tell you that the whole number of French servants, and officers, and hangers on, was little short of three hundred in all.

Not one of these would Charles ever allow to return again, except the queen's physician; but he, at length, was prevailed on to admit forty-six persons in their stead.

The queen was also to have a bishop and con-

fessor, and several other priests of her own persuasion. From this time the king lived much more happily with his wife.

The *first* parliament which met the king on his accession to the throne, occasioned him great vexation, and not without some reason: it was certainly the Commons who had urged King James to a war with Spain, and now that money was required to carry it on they shewed themselves very reluctant to give it.

The king did not indeed ask it graciously; and with regard to any concession from him, "he wanted a way of giving," they said, "to make it pleasant:" thus they did not *begin* happily. The Commons saw at once that if they were ever to obtain those rights again which had by degrees been taken from them, they must fight for every inch of ground, and therefore they would not give much money at a time, in order that the king might be obliged to yield to some of their demands.

But this proved the occasion of many evils: for the king, provoked with their conduct, dissolved one parliament after another, and tried, at length, to do without them altogether, by raising money in oppressive and illegal ways.

The parliament were, for the most part, composed of well-educated, and very able, honourable men; the private characters of most of them were without reproach, and nothing could exceed the steady and manly dignity with which (long before they knew their own power) they asserted what they thought right.

Nay, there is every reason to believe, that they felt grieved to the heart at the king's proceedings, and would willingly have sacrificed much to set him right; but it was utterly impossible to make him sensible that it was not *rebellion* to contend for the just and chartered liberties of the people.

Sometimes their members were sent to prison. Sometimes the most cruel punishments were inflicted on those who dared to write in favour of the people; yet still, the parliaments, though differently chosen, went on in the same course.

And when at length the quarrel became so serious, that for eleven years no parliament at all was summoned in England, the people were rendered indignant by the manner in which money was extorted from them for the king's necessities.

Charles, if not during the whole of his life a highly religious man, was always decent, grave, and attentive to the forms of religion: he was also, as he grew older, a more and more confirmed Protestant.

But one of his grand advisers, Archbishop Laud, gave great alarm to the people by his love of ceremonies, which they thought Popish, and by his severity towards the strict Puritans.

A very large number of the people, particularly among the respectable well-educated classes, were Puritans; and during the first years of Charles's reign they asked for no more than they were well entitled to. But, afterwards, when parties ran high, they went from one thing to

another, till it was extremely difficult to know where they would stop.

They were often very tyrannical in their practices, and ridiculously precise in the smallest particulars: for instance, they mostly adopted the fashion of cutting their hair very close all round their head, so that they got the name of Round-heads; and if any one of their party wore his hair long, according to the usual custom of the times, they even seemed to doubt the religion of that person.

Charles's party were called *Cavaliers*; and because the Puritans were so precise, they were much inclined to go the other way. They prided themselves on their freedom and ease, used bold and often profane language, (though the king set them no such example,) and sported and revelled freely on the Sabbath.

Of course, this is merely the general character of the parties, for some there were among the parliament men, who were far removed from bigotry or vulgarity, and some of the king's friends were sober, upright, and religious people, who followed him because they disapproved of the parliament's proceedings.

At length, after reigning without a parliament for eleven years, the king found it necessary (in 1639) to call one: this, however, he soon dissolved in anger; but the next year another was called, and its members being afraid that he would very soon dismiss it again as he had dismissed the others, passed a bill declaring that it should not be dissolved without its own con-

sent: hence it was called the Long Parliament; and then it went busily to work, complaining of the mischief the king had done since the former parliament had been dismissed, and breaking down as fast as it could the oppressive Star-chamber, and other grievances.

And then it accused Lord Strafford, Charles's favourite minister, of high treason, and sent him to prison to take his trial. This man resembled the king in love of power, and also in his pride, and some obstinacy of disposition; but he was a more able and sagacious man, and would have saved Charles from some troubles had all his counsels been followed.

However, he was brought to his trial, and though the king tried at first to save him, yet when both the houses of parliament judged him guilty, and called on Charles to sign the bill declaring him so, he did it.

This was an act for which one can hardly pardon him. Strafford was his most faithful, attached minister; and Charles had promised him, in a letter written during his trial, that "upon the word of a king, he should not suffer in life, honour, or fortune."

And Strafford, when he found all the people bent on his destruction, had nobly begged his master not to let the thought of this promise trouble him, but to pass the bill for the sake of peace.

Yet the king yielded and gave him up to die, all the time knowing that the deeds of his minister were scarcely to be separated from his own;



Charles the First signing the Earl of Strafford's Death-Warrant.

and when Strafford heard that it was indeed so, he exclaimed, "Put not your trust in princes, nor in the sons of men, for in them there is no salvation."

The next day he was beheaded on Tower Hill.

At last it came to open war between Charles and his parliament. The queen went abroad, and brought money and fire-arms from Holland; for the parliament, having possession of London, had all the guns and weapons in the Tower and Arsenal, and so began with great advantage.

And now England was involved in a civil war again, and people thought the days of the Roses were to come once more; but the parliament did not for a long time go so far as to think of deposing the king.

After the war had lasted some little time, Charles summoned a council of all those parliament-men who were on his side, to meet at Ox-

ford, and refused to acknowledge any other parliament than this.

This Oxford assembly voted that the Lords and Commons remaining at Westminster, who had raised forces against the king, were guilty of high treason; and also it sanctioned a loan of one hundred thousand pounds for the king's present necessities.

But still, even this very parliament of the king's own selection, shewed itself somewhat doubtful of him, for its last act before the session closed was to petition his majesty that "the present irregular levies of contributions, loans, and taxes, for the maintenance of his armies may not be drawn into precedent," with many other cautions; so that Charles was by no means satisfied with it.

The London parliament, meantime, had been going very far in religious matters. The Puritans were now divided into two great parties, the Presbyterians and the Independents. Of these, the Presbyterian was by far the most intolerant.

Popery itself could not be more tyrannical. The holders of this system of religious doctrine and discipline in England, had suffered themselves and their country to be domineered over by the Scotch, who were bigoted adherents to it, and who made it a condition of their aiding the English against the king, that the London parliament should subscribe to a covenant, renouncing the episcopal form of church government, which had hitherto prevailed in England, and that this

covenant should be imposed upon all classes, as far as possible.

Very many of the clergymen of England, who, nevertheless, might be as sincerely desirous of reformation both in Church and State as any other people, refused to take this covenant, and were reduced to beggary by their honesty.

English history has scarcely a more humbling page than this. Cranmer, no doubt, was a persecutor as well as the Romish bigots of his time; but the world was grown older now, and ought to have been wiser.

Not long after this, Archbishop Laud, the same who had particularly provoked the nation by his cruelties towards the Puritans, and his Popish practices, was brought out of the prison where he had now lain nearly four years, untried; and the Commons proceeded to hear evidence against him and bring up a bill impeaching him for treason.

This was altogether a most cruel and harsh proceeding: the Commons were in such haste to condemn the bishop that they required the Lords to vote upon the bill against him without having heard the evidence; and though the judges said none of Laud's acts amounted to treason within any statute, they insisted upon his condemnation, and the poor old man was beheaded in the seventy-second year of his age, at a time when he could have done no hurt, and when there was no excuse for such an act of cruelty.

The day after his death the Liturgy of the Church was abolished, and, besides that the Presbyterian discipline was established instead, an

ordinance was made to the effect, that there should be a fast one day in every week, and the money spared to the family by fasting should be paid in support of the common cause.

The Independents made great efforts to resist the establishment of Presbyterianism. They were opposed to all attempts to oblige states or individuals to conform to any doctrines or modes of worship not fully approved by their consciences.

They said, "that the Christian religion, as contained in Scripture, shall be held forth and recommended as the public profession of the nation; that none shall be compelled by penalties or otherwise to the public profession thus held forth, but that endeavours be used to win them to a sound doctrine, and the example of a good conversation,"* and that, further, "all who profess faith in God, by Jesus Christ, shall be protected in the exercise of their religion, *provided this liberty be not extended to Popery or Prelacy.*"

Oliver Cromwell, who afterwards became the most powerful man in England, was of the Independent party, and struggled against the tyrannical Presbyterians at first with little success, but afterwards gained many to his side, though the parliament was still much opposed to him.

However, he had the greatest power over the army, and by means of this he succeeded in getting quit of the greater part of those members who would not come into his designs.

* Cromwell's Ordinance for the Government of the Commonwealth.

He was a bold, ambitious man; at first, perhaps, as desirous as many others of obtaining what was right and fair, and no more; but the times were now such that most men were of one party or other, and they seemed to forget the common good in their eagerness to advance the interests of these different divisions.

Also, there was such a spirit of fanaticism abroad, that many persons really deemed they were acting for God in the midst of their injustice towards men.

The king was now the prisoner of the parliament, having lost all his army and most of his friends, and the queen having taken her flight also. It was a hard case; for no where could he look for help. None of the neighbouring kings assisted him, and he was left to be tried and judged by his offended subjects without a voice being lifted up for him.

There can be no doubt that he had deeply provoked them. Some of his letters which had fallen into the hands of the parliament, shewed that he had no real intention to keep the different treaties which had been proposed. He seemed to have settled it with himself that the circumstances justified his making false promises which he might afterwards break.

He stood before his judges with the firmness of a martyr, and throughout the whole of the business he behaved with great dignity and composure. The charges that were brought against him were, that he had been a "*tyrant*", because of his desire to reign as an arbitrary monarch; a *traitor*,



Execution of Charles the First.

a month afterwards, could undertake to vindicate the act which had sent an erring, mistaken man, into eternity, without the common forms of justice, even though some might still maintain the people's right to avenge themselves on a tyrannical king.

f.

END OF PART IV. .

1

2

ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART V.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND CO.

65, Paternoster-Row.

1839.



ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

THE COMMONWEALTH. 1648—1660.

I TOLD you that the other sovereigns of Europe sat quietly by during the trial and execution of Charles the First, and that no one came forward to help him; but as soon as he was gone they were willing to share in the spoils of the monarchy.

For the Prime Minister of France, Cardinal Mazarin, bought the rich beds and hangings, and carpets, which had belonged to the late King of England, and furnished his own palace at Paris with them.

And the King of Spain's ambassador bought the finest of his pictures, which were many of them very valuable, as Charles had great taste in painting; and Queen Christina of Sweden was so kind as to buy the best of the medals, and some jewels, and also to purchase some pictures of the parliament's agent.

And the Archduke Leopold of Austria likewise purchased with a large sum of money many

of the best pictures which had adorned the royal palaces.

The parliament published a proclamation ordering that no person should presume to call Charles Stuart, son of the late Charles, king; also they said that it was found unnecessary and troublesome to have a king, and that all writs should henceforth run in the name of the Guardians of English Liberties under the authority of parliament.

The House of Lords was abolished; but the peers might, if they pleased, be elected as knights or burgesses to sit in parliament.

It was resolved to bring to trial several of the late king's friends and ministers, lest they should make a party for themselves in the kingdom; and, accordingly, five noblemen were brought before the judges, tried, and sentenced to die, but three only of them suffered death.

And it must be remarked that, when we consider what a total change was now wrought in the whole government of England, it is a wonderful thing that it should have been brought about with no more bloodshed than this.

The Prince of Wales, whom his friends and party now called Charles the Second, was staying, meanwhile, at the Hague, with the Prince of Orange, who had married his sister. His mother, Henrietta, was in France with his brother the Duke of York, and she wrote to him entreating him to come to her as soon as possible, and not to swear in any counsellors till she could speak with him.

But her son had no great mind to go to France, having been somewhat affronted by the indifference of the French to his calamities; and as he was one who chose to act according to his own judgment, he did not wish to commit himself entirely to his mother's.

At the same time he was in a state of great distress; for, though the Prince of Orange provided him with all that was necessary for himself, he had not enough to support his followers for even a day, and most of them were so poor they had nothing to live upon.

But while he and his friends were debating how they should act, there came some commissioners from the privy-council of Scotland, and also from the kirk or church of that country, declaring that, as the late king had been removed by a violent death, contrary to *their* protest, there was left to them an heir and successor in Charles Stuart, second of that name.

They acknowledged him therefore for their true and lawful king; "but upon condition of his good behaviour and strict observance of the covenant, and entertaining no other persons about him but such as were godly men, and faithful to that obligation."

It was not very agreeable to Charles the Second to accept of a crown from the Scots under these conditions. But he was encompassed by difficulties.

He could not stay where he was; for the people of Holland extremely disliked his being there: they were unwilling to involve themselves by his

means in a war with the Commonwealth of England: and some of Charles's followers had broken into a house where there was a messenger come over from the parliament to Holland, and had murdered the messenger because, they said, "he came from the rebels of England." The Hollanders were extremely angry at the transaction, both because they feared it would raise a great commotion against them in England, and, also, because the man was one of their own countrymen: they had a meeting of *their* parliament, or states-general, and moved, "that it would be fit for the King of England to remove from thence."

Which Charles being made aware of, he was beforehand with them, and announced his intention of departing.

It was then planned that he should pay his mother a short visit, and afterwards go to Ireland, where many of the people were on his side; and the Prince of Orange lent him twenty thousand pounds, which would not do much more than enable him to pay his debts at the Hague and the necessary expences of the journey and voyage.

The young king and his mother had, at first, a sorrowful meeting, and had much to say of the melancholy changes in their affairs: but the queen's lamentations were soon changed into reproaches of her son for the reserve of his behaviour to her; he did not choose to tell her all his plans, nor to give himself up wholly to her advice.

It was not without reason that he was cautious;


For he well knew that the queen, his mother, was very indiscreet and so unpopular in England, at if he were thought to be governed by her it would ruin him there for ever: but there was, besides this, a natural harshness and wilfulness about him which made him very ungracious, at least, to those he ought to have conciliated.

There were many mutual complaints of one another, and it was with difficulty that the friends both kept them in tolerable temper.

Meanwhile, news came from Ireland which disappointed him in his plan of going there. Cromwell had been sent over by the parliament to subdue that country and bring it into obedience to the Commonwealth, and those who knew him had little doubt he would succeed.

It was now August, 1649, and as Charles distasted being in France, and the queen, his mother, was disappointed in *him*, the difficulty was to know where he could best remain. All things considered, Jersey was decided upon, and there he stayed for a considerable time; the Scots sending to him every now and then, to know if he would sign the covenant, and give up all his father's evil counsellors, and come and be their king.

Charles liked the proposal no better than before, and was unwilling to give up all chance of governing in a manner more agreeable to himself. Just at this time, also, a very daring Scotsman, called the Earl of Montrose, who had been a cavalier during Charles the First's reign, and was a bitter enemy to the Scotch Puritans, raised an



army in Holland and Germany, and invaded Scotland.

But he was soon defeated, and executed at Edinburgh. His enterprise, though a brave and gallant one, was inexcusable; for the Scots were already in treaty with Charles, and were only making such arrangements with him as they had a legal right to do.

And Charles admitted this; for he very soon afterwards went to Scotland on the terms they had proposed to him. Before he was allowed to land, however, he signed the covenant, and all the Cavaliers in his train were separated from him.

After this, the Scotch General Assembly proceeded to require a declaration from him, "that he was humbled and afflicted for his father's wicked measures; that he lamented the idolatry of his mother; that he would have no enemies but those of the covenant;" and many more things which it was quite certain his heart did not accord in, and which, therefore, it was equally wicked in the Scots to require, and in him to agree to.

Indeed, one does not know which to blame most. *They* must have seen that he was no convert at heart, and that no oaths will bind a man who is capable of taking them only to gain a kingdom. They might very fairly have required him to promise them liberty to form and maintain their own religious government, but had no right to impose their views upon him.

And Charles began, thus, a course of insincerity and meanness. He was a very gay, dissolute

character, with little, some said *no* sense of religion himself; and yet these good men thought it right to make him say, "that he had attained a full persuasion of the righteousness of the covenant, and was resolved to cast himself and all his interests wholly upon God."

He could not resolve rather to give up his kingdom than be a hypocrite and dissembler.

Meanwhile, Oliver Cromwell having succeeded in subduing Ireland, was approaching Scotland with an army; for those who possessed the chief power in England, were determined to expel Charles from his father's dominions.

When the Scots beheld them approach, they made preparation for battle; but, though their army was larger than Cromwell's, they were defeated.

Not long after, Charles, dissatisfied with the treatment of his Scotch subjects, and with their mode of conducting the war, and having no hope but from some bold measures, persuaded the Scotch generals and their soldiers to march with him at once into England, leaving behind him the successful army of Cromwell.

Cromwell was surprised by this measure, and made haste to follow him, leaving part of his army behind: the parliament in London also immediately raised forces to check Charles's advance; and he did not find himself joined as he expected by many Englishmen.

As soon as Cromwell overtook him, which was near Worcester, he fell upon the young king and the Scotch army, and was again victorious.

This Battle of Worcester took place on the third of September, 1651, and is a very remarkable one, as it caused the flight of Charles the Second and the full establishment of the government without him. From this time England remained nine years without a king.

There is nothing in the History of wonderful Escapes more wonderful than that of Charles the Second after this battle. The parliament immediately after it, offered a reward of £1000 to whoever would betray him; his enemies were numerous; and he was not well acquainted with the country.



Boscobel House.

The first day he lodged in an oak tree in Boscobel Wood on the borders of Staffordshire: he saw several soldiers hot in pursuit of him, ride by; but by good fortune, a gentleman who was attached to his party, was the only one who saw *him*; and this gentleman concealed himself also



King Charles in the Oak.

in the thick boughs, and when night came they got down.

They had to walk nine miles before they came to a poor cottage, the owner of which was known to this gentleman, Captain Careless. The king had suffered greatly from the walk, his feet being hurt by his heavy boots; and when they arrived at this place, the owner could give them only some buttermilk, and a lodging in the haymow.

This poor man knew Captain Careless, but not Charles; and when Careless had seen him safely there, he thought it best to leave him, and seek out some way of further escape, while Charles remained two days in the hayloft.

At the end of that time, Captain Careless sent a man to conduct him to another house, above

twelve miles off; and he changed clothes with his landlord, who, though he did not know him, supposed he was some one of consequence.

After great hardships and dangers, he was at length carried to the house of Mr. Lane, a devoted Royalist. This place was in Staffordshire. Nothing could exceed the kindness of these people to him; but, still, it was deemed necessary to get him out of the country as soon as possible, and for that purpose to take him nearer the sea coast.

Mr. Lane had a relation living near Bristol, which was a very convenient station to send him to; but then it was several days' journey, and they dreaded discovery.

After consulting together, it was thought best that Mr. Lane's daughter should go on a visit to her relation, a Mrs. Norton, and that she should ride thither on horseback behind the king, who was furnished with proper clothes, &c. for the journey.

All the ladies travelled on horseback at this time, and it seemed nothing extraordinary: there was also a servant in Mr. Lane's livery with them. When they came to a house, Mrs. Lane always introduced him as a neighbour's son who had had an ague, and was recommended to try change of air.

Nobody had the least suspicion of him; and they even rode quite through Bristol, where many people had formerly known him, with no remark; but when they got to Mr. Norton's house, it was a *holiday*, and there were people on the lawn

before the door, and the first man the king saw was a chaplain of his own.

He went with the horses to the stable, and, meanwhile, Mrs. Lane told her cousin the same story about his ague, and begged a chamber might be got ready for him. At dinner, the butler was sent up with something for William (as Charles was called) to eat, and while he was speaking to him, looking hard in his face, he suddenly fell on his knees.

The king at first tried to turn it off, but finding himself discovered, asked him who he was, and found the butler was a man well known to his father and himself; so he only charged him to be cautious.

Then the chaplain, whom he had seen before, having heard about William's ague, could not resist the desire to go up stairs and prescribe for him, and accordingly he did so, sat down by him and felt his pulse, but did not know him.

These were some of his escapes; but, before a vessel could be found to take him over to France, he had to pass through many more such. On one occasion he went through a body of the parliament's horse, close by Desborough, one of the chief of Cromwell's friends.

He owed his life in a great measure to the poorest of the people, who would not betray him when they knew him, and also to some of the Catholic persuasion; in all not less than forty people were privy to his concealment and escape.

Brighton was then a small poor fishing-town, and at this mean place Charles was, at length, so

fortunate as to procure a little bark, which took him over to Normandy, from whence he soon made his way to his mother at Paris, after having been in Scotland and England one year and about three months.

It cannot be said all this time that the English people at large were averse to a monarchy, supposing that the oppressions they had heretofore complained of were to be done away; but the army and the more violent of the Puritans had force enough for the present to maintain a government of their own, and they knew well that in restoring the monarchy it was hardly possible but that some of them would be called to a severe account for the late execution of their king.

There was not any one among this reigning party who could compare with Cromwell in ability. He was led on from one thing to another to feel his power. He was ambitious, no doubt; and he was aware that, unless he took some bold step which would place him above control, he should not only be sacrificed himself, but the whole nation would be plunged into anarchy.

So it was that he assumed the title of *Protector*; and having done this, he proceeded to summon a parliament. The number of members of this parliament was four hundred. They were by no means obedient to his will, and discussed very freely the question of his right to assume the powers he had.

At length, they voted that the dignity was *merely an elective* one, not to be transmitted to

his children; and, as Cromwell was disappointed by this decision, he soon after dissolved them.

Cromwell soon found, as most usurpers have found, that it is more difficult to keep power than to gain it. Plots were forming against him: the royal exiles had their friends in England; and several attempts were made to assassinate him. He thought it necessary to take bolder steps still.

He gave up the idea of governing England by its old laws, and devised new ones. He divided the kingdom into districts, and placed one of his own military friends at the head of each, investing him with powers to collect an arbitrary tax levied on all who had in any way sided with the king in the late wars, provided their estates were worth more than a hundred a year.

As the late king had never done any thing more harsh or illegal than this, it was to be expected that many would rise up against him; and Cromwell had indeed many enemies, and he deserved to have them if ever the author of oppressive acts deserved a people's indignation. Among other things, what must we think of the man who could send Englishmen to the West Indies as slaves,* merely because they were disaffected to his government?

Yet, by his abilities, and especially by his foreign policy, he procured more respect for his


* See here a note in Mr. Hallam's Constitutional History, vol 2, p. 368. No less than fifty gentlemen were sold for slaves at Barbadoes.

country during his short reign (for though not a king he had all the powers of one) than it had possessed since the days of Elizabeth. He was courted and feared by all the sovereigns in Europe; and, had his son possessed his talents, he would probably have continued in the same station.

It should also be said, that Cromwell's influence was most valuable to foreign Protestants: wherever they were oppressed by the Catholics, he succoured them, and generally succeeded in procuring better terms for them.

Cromwell's designs, good or bad, were, however, early cut off; a short and sudden illness ended his days in his fifty-ninth year, after about seven years of nearly supreme power.

His son Richard, who was allowed without any immediate opposition to succeed to the protectorate, was an amiable, peaceable young man, whose character and wishes would have disposed him to retirement; but when his father died, several of his most experienced friends and counsellors came round him, and some, who had for a time kept aloof, thought they could not now do better for their country than maintain the government as it was, since they found Richard Cromwell ready to listen to any suggestions for the benefit of the people.

They considered this as a far less dangerous course than that of calling back the Stuarts; but it proved that their power was not equal to their wishes. The army was not willing to submit to  a man who knew nothing of war; and se-

veral of Cromwell's officers revolted against the government, and obliged the young protector to dissolve the parliament, soon after which he himself resigned.

There was one man in the army, of great reputation, who was yet in some degree suspected of an attachment to the royalist party, and this was General Monk. It was true, he had steadily adhered to the parliament; but, still, the royalists had always some hopes of him, on account of his early connexions, and also because he was a moderate man in religion.

There is no reason to suppose he had any thought of restoring the Stuarts so long as young Richard Cromwell was protector; but after he had retired, his thoughts turned to them. He did not like the proceedings of the men who remained behind, but he did not immediately declare himself; and though he had a fine army under his command, he remained in London for some weeks, only sounding the opinions of different people and parties.

He behaved during this time with the greatest possible dissimulation: neither party knew on which side he was; but, after a time, it was found that he had determined on seconding the wishes of those who desired Charles's return.

They who desired it were certainly very many. A vast number of the people, tired of the uncertainties of the government, and disliking the power of the army, were heartily wishing for the old form of king, lords, and commons.

The parliament had, they well knew, given



them great security against past evils. The Star-chamber was done away with. The Bill of Rights was the law of the land. They were not now, as in the beginning of Charles the First's reign, exposed to the evils which these reforms had remedied.

These considerations satisfied many of the moderate men; and as to the Cavaliers, they were too happy to have the old order of things restored.

Such of the people as were of a lively temper, not inclined to Puritanism, were also sure to be on Charles's side; and these were indeed so violent in their joy at the prospect of having a merry and pleasure-loving king among them, that their voices drowned those of the Puritans, who were far from easy at the thought of the change.

On the whole, General Monk found the people more disposed than might have been looked for to receive the king; and this being the case, he would not lose time, but sent to advise his addressing a letter to the parliament, which the king did, promising indemnity to all offenders, except some, hereafter to be specified, and to govern strictly according to the laws and customs of the kingdom.

The parliament willingly received this letter, and sent a reply full of compliments: they seemed to have passed at once from distrust to the most unbounded confidence; but it must be remembered that this parliament was a newly chosen one, and that the people who selected its members were decidedly inclined to the Restoration.

Thus the civil war and the period of the Commonwealth came to an end; and Charles the Second was placed on his father's throne on the twenty-ninth of May 1660, being then thirty years of age.

You may feel some curiosity to know what became of young Richard Cromwell. He was not molested after Charles the Second's return, but thought it better to travel for a while.

On one occasion, when he was in France, he was introduced under a feigned name to a great man of the country, who talked with him about English affairs, and at last broke out into praises of Oliver Cromwell.

"But as for that poor, pitiful fellow, Richard," said he, "what is become of *him*? How could he be such a blockhead as to make no better account of all his father's successes?"

Richard probably held his tongue, and kept his secret; but he does not seem to have regretted his high station. His quiet life was lengthened to an extreme old age; till the latter end of Queen Anne's reign; and he seems to have gained much of the peaceable renown of "*the good Lord Clifford*."

THE RESTORATION.

THE THIRD STUART.—CHARLES THE SECOND. 1660—1685.

I have already told you of the prodigious joy

of the Cavaliers at the return of the king. He seemed so welcome to the nation, that, as it was said by himself, "the wonder was why he had not come before, since all seemed now so delighted to see him."

But some there were who went silently to their homes, and uttered no words, but waited to see how things would proceed; and some were shocked at the thought of the risk the nation was about to run in taking back the exiles, without making stricter conditions that all the best provisions of the Long Parliament should continue in force.

Some too there were who dreaded that religious men would now be oppressed, and that the king, and the Duke of York, his brother, who had lived so long in Catholic countries, would be more attached to that religion than to the Protestant.

There was a man in those days who was now old and blind, but who had been one of the most useful and active friends of the people.

He was a learned, liberal, noble-minded man, and in his younger time, when his education in England was finished, had gone over to Italy, to see Rome and Naples.

He was enjoying the sight of all the fine buildings and libraries, and the beautiful country, when news came to him that his countrymen were struggling to gain back those liberties of which they had been deprived by the Tudors and their successors.

Just at that time, this young traveller was reckoning on a still longer and more interesting

journey; but when he heard what was going on in England, he could not indulge himself abroad; and he came home to help, as far as he could, by his writings, in the cause he esteemed right.

And, besides this, he gave up his whole estate to the use of the parliament; and all he had in return was the office of Latin Secretary to Cromwell, and a present of a thousand pounds for a work called, "A Defence of the People of England."

He entirely lost his eyesight in consequence of his diligence in preparing this work: his enemies then taunted him, and said it was a judgment upon him.

But MILTON (for that was his name) replied, "that he neither repined nor repented; that he had not found God was angry; that with regard to this calamity, He it was who comforted and upheld him."

When Charles the Second returned, great efforts were made to ruin Milton; but he escaped, and was afterwards pardoned. He retired however to a private life, and there it was that he began and finished the poem of *Paradise Lost*. Being blind, he could not write it down, but used to call his daughters when he had made a good many lines, and they wrote what he told them.

When he had sent out this wonderful work, the finest poem in our own, or any other language, it brought him in only fifteen pounds. But Milton did not murmur either at that, or any thing else. It did not matter much to him that he was not read or admired by the gay witlings of the

whose poetry was as different as possible from his.

For his mind seemed to be in heaven far more than on earth. He was brought up among the Puritans, yet never was sour or morose: he could not bear the tyrannical endeavour to bind the consciences of his fellow-creatures, and wanted all to be free.

This man was one of those I have mentioned, who said nothing but thought much, when their noisy countrymen called back Charles Stuart. There may have been but one Milton; but there were many who, like him, felt apprehensive of evil days to come.

Nor were their fears vain. All were to suffer in turn from Charles the Second, though in himself he was neither malignant nor tyrannical; but he was unfeeling, profligate, and had no belief in the sincerity or virtue of any human being.

He was clever and shrewd, and acted with a good deal of prudence towards the nation at first, and paid some regard to the Puritan party as well as the Cavaliers; but the latter having gained a large majority in the parliament, proceeded with great hardship towards the former.

You remember that the Long Parliament in the civil war took away the Book of Common Prayer, and required the clergy to sign the covenant, or lose their livings, and that many *did* lose them; but that one-fifth of the profits of these livings was settled on them for their lives, that they might not starve.

But the Cavaliers were not so tender as this.

It was required that all the clergy who were in possession of livings when Charles returned, should be again ordained, (if they had not already been ordained by a bishop,) should abjure the covenant, and express their assent to every thing in the Book of Common Prayer, by a certain day, or else give up *the whole* of their livings.

Accordingly, about two thousand ministers of religion, who could not conscientiously do what was required, gave up, in one day, all their means of living, and, in consequence, underwent the greatest hardships.

But this was not enough; for the next year the Cavalier parliament passed an act declaring that wherever *five* persons above those of one household assembled in a religious congregation, every one above the five was liable to pay five pounds, or be imprisoned three months, and higher fines and transportation were to follow a second and third offence.

So that no congregation of worshipers could meet but in a church, and under the control of the Episcopacy. Afterwards, the poor ministers who had tried to evade this act, even *once*, were forbidden to come within five miles of that place.

These men could not be accused of any disloyalty. On the contrary, there were none who prayed more heartily at all their meetings for the king and the government; but the parliament and the leading ministers of the day seemed to have set it down as a certainty that they must be

disaffected, and went about to punish them beforehand.

One would have thought, after all the distress Charles had suffered in his younger days, that he would have been somewhat the more thoughtful and provident a king; but perhaps there never was a monarch on the English throne so shamefully profuse, or who neglected the payment of his just debts with so little remorse.

He was a splendid dresser, and he lavished stores of wealth on banquets, and horses, and women. There was no regard to decency at his court. Drinking, swearing, gaming, and rioting, filled up the Sabbath evenings; and when the plague broke out worse than ever, in London, the king and his courtiers were in such haste to have their jovial meetings again, that they ordered a General Thanksgiving to be offered up for the disappearance of the disease, when it was well known not to be over.

Another calamity followed close on the plague, and this was the great fire in London of 1666, which broke out in a baker's shop near the bridge, and spread so rapidly as to burn down in its course no less than thirteen thousand houses.

The streets of London were at this time very narrow; the houses chiefly of wood: it was a dry season too, and a strong east wind prevailed, so that no efforts could save the closer part of the city; and the only way by which the flames could at length be stopped, was by blowing up houses *in various* directions with gunpowder, so as to



Great Fire of London.

leave intervals between the flames and other dwellings.

The king and his brother were, on this occasion, very kind and active in assisting the people; and as several thousand citizens were turned adrift into the fields without clothing or food, they exerted themselves to provide them shelter and necessaries.

It is remarkable that only six lives were lost in this fire; though the plague had lately swept away as many as sixty-eight thousand five hundred and ninety-six persons.

The Cathedral Church of St. Paul's, eighty-six parish churches, six chapels, the Royal Exchange, Guildhall, the Custom House, and many other buildings, were destroyed; also, four stone bridges.

But it was soon found that this great apparent calamity was likely to prove a blessing to the

country. The city was rebuilt in a more airy and healthy manner. Brick and stone were chiefly used; and, besides that fires became much less frequent, the plague has scarce ever appeared since in England.

One great man who was employed by the king in beautifying London after these disasters was Sir Christopher Wren. When Englishmen look at St. Paul's Cathedral, they ought to know and remember the name of the architect who built that noble pile.

They ought also to know that Sir Christopher Wren not only designed and erected St. Paul's, but also that some of the finest among the other churches in London are his work.

St. Stephen's, Walbrook, St. James's in Piccadilly, and St. Andrew's in Holborn, are among these; also the spire of St. Dunstan's in the East.

He also designed the Monument, and a great part of Greenwich Hospital and Hampton Court Palace.

The first stone of St. Paul's was laid by Wren in 1663, and the work was pronounced by him to be fully complete in 1711. He died in 1723, having lived during the last five years in perfect retirement, only being carried once a year to see his great work.

When we recollect in how many struggles the nation was involved during the life-time of this man, who first began his quiet laborious career in the stormy times of Charles the First, it seems wonderful that he should have been enabled to *do so much*.

The difficulties of his undertaking were greatly increased by the violent spirit of party; yet, he worked on, rearing these noble monuments, and never abated in zeal or spirit, till he was actually turned out of his office by the intrigues of some Germans at the court of George the First.

I have not before told you, that on the Restoration, the religion of the Church of England was again introduced in Scotland.

This was a most ill-judged and unfortunate measure. The Scots had for many years been devoted to their own form of church government, and could not bear Episcopacy: nothing, therefore, could be more arbitrary than to impose it upon them, against the will of their parliaments; and it was found impossible to make the ministers conform, or the people go to hear the new teachers.

Yet the government, determined to carry its point, passed several severe laws; among others, citizens were to forfeit a fourth part of their property, if they did not attend their parish church, and were liable to any corporal punishment the privy council might appoint.

A son was put to death for aiding in the escape of his father, a woman for refusing to give up her husband to justice.

At length, after several years' endurance, the people were driven into insurrection: after this, more and more executions took place, till the court was tired of blood, and sent orders to stop the proceedings; but two of the bishops would not allow these orders to be known till they had

taken away the life of a young preacher, whom they first put to the torture.

He died in the midst of his sufferings, exclaiming, "Farewell, sun and moon! Farewell, world and time! Farewell, weak and frail body! Welcome, God, my Father! Welcome, Christ, my Redeemer! Welcome, glory and eternal life! Welcome, death!"

One would think it impossible that so tyrannical a government could be borne by a free people; and what is still further striking in the history of those times, is the meanness and treachery of the king and his brother.

It is now a certain well-known fact, that the King of France paid Charles and his brother, and several of their friends, large sums of money, in order that they might not be obliged to call parliaments. It was the interest of Louis, the French king, to keep Charles on the throne. He had certain designs on the Protestant states of Europe which he knew would fall to the ground if the people of England prevailed.

Consequently, he kept an ambassador in London during the whole of this and the next reign, for the sake of secret correspondence with Charles; and while the king affected to attend to the parliament's advice, and to be jealous of the Popish designs of the French king, he was all the while in a secret league with him.

By little and little these plots were suspected, and then made known to some patriotic leaders in the House of Commons, who were very indignant at the king's duplicity, and who felt

the disgrace of their king being a pensioner of France.

But they were so much alarmed at the thought of the Duke of York, Charles's brother, succeeding to him, as Charles himself had no children by his queen, that they would not vote him the money he wanted till they had prepared a bill on the subject.

This bill went further than at first was thought of. They had not at first proposed to do more than to provide against a Catholic bringing in popery; but it came more and more into the minds of the Protestants that they should run the greatest danger in having a Catholic king at all. They thought most of passing over the duke, and taking his daughters, who were both Protestants and married to Protestant princes, his successors.

The bill was called the Exclusion Bill, because proposed to exclude the Duke of York; but it never passed the House of Lords: and when it was a second time introduced into the House of Commons, the king in great anger dismissed the parliament, and resolved never to call another.

And when he was thus free of parliaments, he reigned in a very arbitrary manner, bringing some of the noblemen who had opposed him to trial for treason; among others, Lord William Russell, one of the noblest and most virtuous characters England ever possessed.

Two years afterwards, Charles the Second died, after a short illness; and was succeeded without immediate open opposition by his brother James, Duke of York.

THE FOURTH STUART.

JAMES II. 1685—1688.

The brother of Charles the Second who now came to the English throne, was a sincere Catholic, and he never disguised this, or wished to appear different from what he was.

He had married for his first wife, the daughter of Lord Clarendon, and had by her two daughters, Mary and Anne. These daughters were well and carefully educated; and though both father and mother were Catholics, while *they*, as heirs to the English throne, were brought up by Protestant teachers, they lived in great peace and harmony so long as they remained under the same roof.

When these daughters grew up, the people of England were of course anxious concerning their marriages, as they felt it to be of great consequence that they should marry Protestant princes.

Mary, therefore, was married to William, Prince of Orange; and Anne, some years afterwards, to George, Prince of Denmark.

But, meanwhile, James the Second married again, his first wife being dead, and had a son, who being brought up a Catholic was however *never* called by any other name than that of "*the Pretender*" to the English throne.

The Princess Mary, who had married the Prince

of Orange, went to Holland with her husband; but Anne remained living in London with Prince George, and had several children, though only one of them survived his infancy.

Two years after Anne's marriage, her uncle Charles the Second died, and her father came to the throne.

You know that the nation had expressed great dread of his bringing in Popery, and had even wished to exclude him from the throne on that account.

But during the last years of Charles the Second's life, when he reigned without a parliament, he had so far got the mastery over the people that they submitted to James without any difficulty, and his first parliament was a very complying one.

They trusted every thing to the king's word, and gave him all the money he asked for.

Not long afterwards, the Duke of Monmouth, who was a natural son of the late king, took occasion to build some hopes for himself on the knowledge of the dread the nation entertained for Popery, and landing in Dorsetshire with some soldiers, a good many of the common people joined him.

They were very soon however defeated, and Monmouth, being taken prisoner, was beheaded; but this invasion, and the knowledge of some of the people having joined the rebels, were made the excuse for a most terrible and severe enquiry.

A vast number of people were put into prison merely on suspicion; and a savage and corrupt

judge, named Jefferies, being sent down to try them, behaved in such a violent manner towards the juries, that they often gave a verdict of guilty in order to escape themselves out of his hands.

Ladies of rank and fortune were executed in the most cruel manner. One venerable old lady was burned alive, merely for having given shelter to a rebel.

It would be a wearying business to mention half the cruel and oppressive acts which marked the four years of James's reign.

Though the nation was certainly disposed to be too bitter and intolerant towards Catholics, it was a happy thing that the bare idea of the Protestant religion being in danger, had so strong an influence with them; had it not been so, it is probable our civil and religious liberties would have been entirely lost at this time.

But these were saved for us through the king's zeal *for* Popery, and the nation's zeal against it. He roused up a spirit which was too strong for him; and the people, who had allowed him to set their other laws at defiance, broke loose at once when he sent seven bishops to the Tower for refusing to read an act of indulgence to the Catholics.

At this time the king's daughter, Anne, writing to her sister Mary in Holland, said, "Things are come to that pass now, that, if they go on much longer, I believe no Protestant will be able to *live*."

And she added, "I am resolved to undergo *any thing* rather than change my religion; nay,



Seven Bishops sent to the Tower.

if it should come to that, I had rather live on alms than change.”

This shews she was a sincere Protestant, though at one time King James was much inclined to hope he should convert her to the Catholic faith.

Soon after the affair of the bishops, and after the birth of a son to King James, the nation being thoroughly convinced that a Popish king was likely to overthrow all their Protestant institutions and liberties, began to turn with great anxiety to the Prince of Orange; and several of the chief men in the kingdom wrote to entreat him to come over to England and save them from their perilous situation.

William, the Prince of Orange, was an upright, prudent, brave, and honest man. He had saved his own country from ruin, and now he was ready to turn to England, behaving however with the

utmost regard to the laws, and wishing for no more power than these would fairly give him.

James was extremely alarmed when he found that one loud cry for William was sounding from one part of England to another. He had been completely deceived by the complying temper of his parliament with regard to the measures of his government, and seems to have thought that a little more firmness only was necessary to change the English from a Protestant to a Catholic nation.

He turned pale and trembled. He tried to undo all he had been doing: to restore the cities their charters, to replace the churchmen he had turned out of their livings, and even to caress the bishops.

But these measures came too late: all saw that he was heart and soul a Stuart as to government, with the additional evil of being a bigot in Popery.

The prince, meanwhile, published a declaration, in which he gave an account of the oppressions of England, and said, that, by the request of most of the people of rank and consequence, he was coming over with an armed force out of necessity, lest the king should attack him; but that his aim was to see a free and legal parliament assembled once more to provide for the safety and happiness of the realm.

The prince soon followed his declaration, and landed at Torbay on the fifth of November 1688. The people pressed to welcome him; and a petition for a free parliament was signed by twenty-



William III. landing at Torbay.

four bishops and peers of great distinction, and presented to the king.

At first the king called together his army, and marched to meet his son-in-law. But so many of the soldiers and officers deserted to the prince, that he took the alarm, and returned to London.

And when he reached London, a more bitter mortification awaited him. Then he learned that his favourite daughter, the Princess Anne, and her husband, had fled from him, and were gone over to his enemies.

At this news, James's fortitude wholly deserted him. "God bless me!" said he, bursting into tears, "my own children have forsaken me!"

James had not been a bad or unkind father, and had reckoned on the affection of his daughters: but they had, I have told you, been separated from their parent in religious faith and feeling from their earliest childhood, and so deep-

ly had they imbibed the hatred of Popery, that it even conquered, in a measure, their natural feeling for him.

Anne, indeed, never lost her reverence for him; for years afterwards we find her entertaining scruples about reigning instead of her brother: but Mary seems to have been fully decided to think only of her husband, and as far as possible forget her unhappy father.

James, when he found himself thus deserted, fled in a panic from London, and remained concealed in a ship on the river; afterwards he appeared again on shore, and made some attempts to gain over a party; but finding it all in vain, he yielded to his queen's advice, and made his escape to France.

The Prince of Orange was now the choice of the nation, as he had been the heir of the throne before the birth of James's son; but he was not satisfied with the idea of coming in by conquest, or by the invitation of a party. Still further, he wished the government to be settled at once upon a good and right footing.

For this purpose it was thought best, as there was now no parliament sitting, and the parliament chosen in this reign had not been a free and legal one, to call together all those gentlemen who had sat in any of the parliaments of Charles the Second's reign, and also the Lord Mayor of London, the aldermen, and fifty of the common council.

Ninety of the peers and bishops had, before *this*, addressed the prince, requesting him to

summon such a convention, and they declined reading a letter which their late king had sent them.

When this convention met, they voted that King James the Second had broken the laws, and withdrawn himself out of the kingdom, had deserted the government, and the throne was therefore become vacant. They then settled the crown on William and Mary; and after their death upon Anne: in case neither of them had children, it was afterwards settled that the kingdom should go to the Electress of Hanover, and her children.

Thus was this great revolution brought about without strife or bloodshed; and James the Second ceased to be king.

WILLIAM AND MARY. 1688—1694.

WILLIAM, ALONE. 1694—1701.

No wiser nor more able and just man had sat on the throne of England since the days of Alfred than William the Third. But yet, after the first fervours of joy at his coming to England had subsided, he was not so popular a king as might have been expected.

One of the reasons for this was a coldness in his manner; another was his being a foreigner, and having a great affection for his native subjects and country. He was a remarkably upright and honest man, and it hurt him to find that the English had so much the habit of mistrusting their kings, that they did not give him credit for his honourable intentions.

He was particularly distasteful to his Scotch subjects, who retained, in spite of all their sufferings, a strong interest in their old line of Stuart kings.

James the Second, after a time, made a desperate attempt in Ireland to reseat himself on the throne; and William was obliged to go thither and fight against his father-in-law. After gaining a great victory, called the Battle of the Boyne, he succeeded in firmly establishing himself, and James was obliged to return to France, where he died in the year 1700.



Battle of the Boyne.

Meantime, Queen Mary and her sister Anne did not very cordially agree. Anne had had a friend in her earliest youth, called Sarah Jennings, who was about three years older than herself: this friend was a very clever, high-spirited, *violent* girl, while Anne was quiet, gentle, and *weak*.

In all their youthful sports, Sarah Jennings was the real mistress, and Anne only the affectionate friend, who, being of this easy disposition, loved her companion the more, perhaps, because she had a high sense of her spirit and talent.

As they grew up, their attachment seemed but to increase. They were almost always together: afterwards, Sarah Jennings married Captain Churchill, who was also engaged in the service of the court, and was made a peer after Anne's father came to the throne.

Lord and Lady Churchill were among the most violent opponents of Popery, and though Lord Churchill owed every thing to King James, he was one of the first to desert him; and it was generally thought that Anne's friend had persuaded her to leave London at the time when her father was so distressed by her departure.

When William and Mary came to the throne, Lord Churchill was made Earl of Marlborough; and his wife (the former Sarah Jennings) remained as intimate as ever with Anne, and wholly ruled her.

She persuaded Anne to demand of her brother and sister a settlement of seventy thousand pounds a year, which William and Mary both thought very unreasonable; and, after a great deal of quarreling, she agreed to take fifty thousand.

The Countess of Marlborough was much blamed for having spirited up the Princess Anne to make this demand; and the king and queen were

so angry as to deprive Lord Marlborough of all his offices, and banish his lady from the court.

Anne would not let her friend go without her; but at once removed with her husband and children from the palace: and Lady Marlborough kept up the quarrel between the sisters, who were both naturally of kind and peaceable dispositions. Mary was a cleverer woman than Anne, and very exemplary in her duties.

She never was on friendly terms with her sister again, though she sent her a forgiving message upon her death-bed; and Anne afterwards went as usual to court.

From this time Anne was heir to the throne; but, before King William's death, she had the grief of losing her own son, by Prince George of Denmark, the last born of six children, who died in his eleventh year, in consequence of over-heating himself when dancing on his birthday.

No trial of Anne's ever occasioned her so much sorrow as this. Her son was a very amiable, promising boy, the delight of every heart; and in losing him she seemed to lose again all her other children. She never could mention him without bursting into tears, for years afterwards.

The nation, too, grieved; for the loss was great in every point of view. It may be sometimes necessary, but it is never agreeable or desirable to have to seek one's monarch in a foreign land; and this was what the people believed they must do now that their own native prince was no more.

James the Second, however, the father of Anne

and Mary, still lived in France; and the Catholics, of whom there were a good many still in England, and those who were attached to James and his family, were in hopes that, after the death of Anne's son, the crown would again revert to her father.

She appears to have written to her father, James, informing him of her son's death, and very respectfully asking whether he would object to her accepting the throne if it pleased Providence to remove King William; telling him at the same time what had been the decision of the English Houses of Parliament.

James answered this letter, desiring her on no account whatever, as she valued her duty to him and Heaven, to seat herself on the English throne, which he told her would interfere with the rights of his son, her brother, who was afterwards called, *the Pretender*.

How Anne might have acted if her father had lived, I cannot pretend to say; but a few months afterwards he died in France, and not long afterwards King William, whose health had been long declining, expired, in the fifty-second year of his his age: and Anne was immediately proclaimed Queen of England, March 1702.

THE LAST STUART.

ANNE. 1702 – 1714.


Had Anne refused the crown, England would immediately have been involved in a civil war. One party would have called over the Electress of Hanover, and made *her* queen, and another (the Catholics) would have set up the Pretender, Anne's brother.

There were at this time, two great parties in England, and you can hardly understand what follows without knowing something of them.

One party was that which brought about the Revolution of 1688. They maintained that the Protestant religion being the religion of the state, no Roman Catholic could lawfully be placed at the head of it; that the King of England ruled under the influence of certain laws, and that if he broke those laws, the people were justified in dethroning him and choosing another.

They said that James the Second had forfeited his right to the throne, both by being a Catholic and by certain illegal acts; and that as the parliament had chosen another monarch, and fixed the succession, he and his family had no longer any right of interference. This party was called the *Whig* party.

The other party was called the *Tory* party: *they* maintained that the power given to a sove-



reign was derived only from God, and not from man; they deemed the will of the king still more binding than the law of the land, in every thing but religion; that however wicked he might be, it was criminal to depose him, except when the religion of the state was endangered.

They thought the family of James the Second had a divine right to reign. They were most of them Protestants, but they liked the Catholics better than the Dissenters. The great difference between the parties however was, that the one (the Tories) were constantly endeavouring to bring back the banished family, while the Whigs wished the succession to remain as parliament had settled it.

It was very natural that a woman like Anne, who was of an affectionate disposition, and not strong minded, should wish first to favour those she loved; and she would have liked her husband to be proclaimed king, but the nation overruled her in this.

George of Denmark was any thing but ambitious himself, and was as willing as possible to remain merely the first subject of the crown: all the queen's favours therefore were at her own disposal, and she showered them upon the Marlborough family.

The Earl was made Captain-General of the English armies. His lady was Mistress of the Robes, and Keeper of the Privy Purse, and her daughters and their husbands were also promoted to offices of honour and trust.

Nearly all these people were of the Whig party.

After all these arrangements were made, the queen was crowned; and her husband very quietly and contentedly walked in the procession as first prince of the blood.

It is singular that Anne, who was herself very quiet and pacific, should have been engaged in one long war during her whole reign: she was not expensive in her own habits, and yet more English money was lavished in her reign than had ever been spent in an equal time before in England.

This was owing in a great measure to her claim to the throne being a disputed one. The King of France, Louis the Fourteenth, who was the most powerful monarch of the day, was on the side of her brother, the Pretender; and, besides this, he was a man of such vast ambition, that nearly all the powers in Europe were obliged to unite for their common defence against him.

Anne was scarcely come to the throne, when she declared her intention to join these allies against Louis; and all the Whig party approved of this war, fearing the power of Louis, and his success in forcing the son of James the Second upon them.

Lord Marlborough proved one of the greatest generals England has ever seen; and, after having done his duty well, one season, was made a duke, so that Sarah Jennings was now Duchess of Marlborough.

Meantime, the queen made herself very popular at home. She gave a hundred thousand pounds a year out of her own fortune, to the service of the state; and she settled also a certain

sum to be divided among the poorer clergy, which sum is called even now, "Queen Anne's bounty."

You have heard that in the reign of Queen Elizabeth there were a great many very celebrated writers, as well as statesmen and generals; so it was also in the reign of Queen Anne. There was then indeed no poet at all equal to Shakespeare; but there were some very witty, clever, able writers, who exercised a great deal of influence.

One of these was Sir Richard Steele, who published a paper, called *the Tatler*, which used to be printed in London, and published by breakfast-time in the morning.

It was quite a new thing in England, and was thought a great deal of; and it certainly did a great deal of good, sometimes by severely remarking on the vices of the time, and sometimes laughing at its follies.

After it, followed another work, called *the Spectator*, which was published every day except Sunday; Saturday's paper being generally a religious one. Mr. Addison, another great writer of the day, conducted this: he was the author of several beautiful hymns; one of them, "The spacious firmament on high," another, "The Lord my pasture shall prepare." The *Spectator* went on till there were six hundred and thirty-five papers, which in old-fashioned libraries are generally to be found, bound up in eight volumes.

Some of these papers in the *Spectator* are beautiful sermons, and some of them very divert-

ing: they give a very curious and faithful idea of the manners of the people of Queen Anne's reign; and while you are reading, you seem almost to see before you the ladies in their large hooped petticoats, and their flame-coloured hoods; and the gentlemen in their great periwigs and red-heeled shoes.



Costume of Queen Anne's Reign.

Addison says of the ladies of those days, "They let the hair of their heads grow to a great length; but tie it up in little knots, and cover it from being seen: while the men buy up an enormous bush of hair, which covers their heads, and hangs down in a large fleece behind their backs, with which they walk up and down the streets, and are as proud of it as if it was of their own growth."

There never was a time when parties were

more violent than in the reign of Queen Anne. As a woman was on the throne, I suppose other women thought they had a particular right to meddle with the affairs of the court and the nation; and the Duchess of Marlborough set them a very bad example from her great violence of temper and spirit.

I must tell you one funny story told by Addison in the Spectator, which took great pains to bring the women to a feeling of the harm they were doing by indulging themselves in saying all sorts of spiteful things, the Whigs of the Tories, and the Tories of the Whigs.

At that day, among a lady's *ornaments* were reckoned little black patches on her face. These patches put on here and there *we* should now think very ugly, unsightly things; but it was the fashion then, and almost every lady was *patched*.

Well: in the Spectator there is a story of the two rival parties of ladies going to the Opera; the Whig ladies with patches only on the left side of their faces, the Tories with them only on the right, to shew which party they belonged to.

Most unfortunately one of the Whig ladies had a mole on the Tory side of her face, which was very provoking, because it looked like a patch, and made her suspected by the Whigs; and one of the Tory ladies having a pimple on the Whig side, was obliged to put on a patch there, which made her look like a Whig.

It was quite shocking to see and hear the petty and spiteful spirit of the women at that day. Instead of using their influence to bring their hus-

bands to a peaceable Christian temper of mind, they did nothing but excite them to quarrel.

I shall not tell you much about the wars in Queen Anne's time, for I do not at all like war; and though I believe this was very necessary in order to humble the French king, who would else have probably done England great mischief, it was melancholy to think of the slaughter and desolation in those countries where the armies met and fought.

Marlborough, who was not only a most excellent general, but a very humane man, was so shocked at the miseries of the people around him that he could hardly bear to contemplate it. Besides that, in *one* battle alone, as many as *twenty-five thousand* men were left dead on the field, he says, that "half the people in the villages were dead, and the rest looked as if they were come out of their graves."



Battle of Blenheim.

I ought to tell you that the battle just mentioned was the famous Battle of Blenheim. In gratitude to Marlborough for his services in this battle, parliament built him a most beautiful palace, called Blenheim, at Woodstock in Oxfordshire, near where the royal palace used to stand which Queen Elizabeth inhabited.

It is still one of the grandest nobleman's seats in England, and is surrounded by a very fine park and beautiful gardens.

Now, you may suppose that *Sarah Jennings* was in the height of her glory. Indeed she was;



Blenheim House.

and well would it have been for her, had she known how to wear her honours with half the meekness of her excellent husband.

But there never was a women of a more turbulent ungovernable temper. Her behaviour to her husband, her children, and servants, had, for a

long time, been most violent and trying; but it might have been expected that deference for her royal mistress would be some restraint upon her, and prevent her giving way to such outrageous passions as she shewed to her equals.

However it was not so; and as it happened that the duchess favoured the Whig party, and the queen the Tory party, here was a constant subject of dispute between them. But Anne was no match for her Mistress of the Robes in talents nor in talk. She feared her, though she had ceased in a great measure to love her, and this *fear*, for some time, enabled the duchess to retain her hold at court.

I have told you that, after the death of Mary Queen of Scots and of Elizabeth of England, James the First was king of both countries, and that from this time they have never had more than one king at a time ruling over them. But, up to the year 1706, about the middle of Queen Anne's reign, Scotland had a parliament of her own.

Now, however, it was thought better to unite the two kingdoms, and have but one parliament for all; and it was agreed that Scotland should send members to England, sixteen lords to the House of Lords, and forty-five gentlemen to the House of Commons.

And this was called the *Union* (with Scotland,) and from this time the two kingdoms have been called Great Britain.

It happened about the year 1707, that the Duchess of Marlborough having a poor relation,

a woman who was greatly in want of some means of livelihood, had introduced her to the queen, who made her Woman of the Bedchamber.

This woman's name was Abigail Hill; but she became soon after Mrs. Masham, on her marriage with Masham, one of the court pages. Though she owed every thing to the Duchess of Marlborough, yet such was her ingratitude and perfidy, that she very soon took pains to supplant the duchess in her royal mistress's favour.

She was a low-minded, vulgar woman, and merely gained Anne's affection by flattery, and by hearing all her complaints against the duchess. She was also in the confidence of two of the principal Tory lords, who made use of her to weaken Queen Anne's attachment to those among her servants who were Whigs, and particularly to the Duke of Marlborough.

It is always a dangerous thing to select as a favourite friend one who has neither strength of mind nor principle; but to a queen it is a fatal error: and Queen Anne became much less worthy of respect when under the power of Mrs. Masham, than when in that of Sarah Jennings, who, in spite of her violent temper, had an honourable mind and some very just views, and whose friends were certainly the flower of Anne's court.

Of course, when the duchess found that the person whom she had recommended to the queen was thus treacherously supplanting her, her indignation was violent. She demanded of the queen that Mrs. Masham should be dismissed; and when Anne refused, upbraided and perse-

cuted her with reproaches and sad appeals to their former friendship.

There were continual petty quarrels between them. On one occasion, when the queen went to St. Paul's, sumptuously dressed, the duchess, as Mistress of the Robes, was in the same carriage with her; and while all the people were shouting and huzzaing, and the queen striving to look gracious and return their greetings pleasantly, the duchess tormented her the whole way with her complaints, because her majesty had not chosen to wear her jewels as *she* had meant them to be worn.

She attributed this to Mrs. Masham's interference; and soon after the queen's return to the palace, requesting an interview with her, was so violent, that her loud voice was heard in the next chamber reproaching the queen; and after this they were more estranged than ever.

Meantime the Duke of Marlborough constantly tried to soften matters, but in vain. He prevailed on his wife to absent herself wholly from court for a time, and he told her "he had always observed that in disputes between former friends, all reproaches, though ever so reasonable, served no purpose but to widen the breach."

It is possible the duchess would have remained for a longer time at a distance from the queen, which was what her husband chiefly recommended, had it not been for an unforeseen event, which brought back her feeling of affection for her royal mistress, and made her anxious to be with her for Anne's own sake.

The queen's husband, Prince George of Den-

mark, was, as I have told you, much beloved by Anne, and it was with deep grief that she saw him seized with a violent illness in the autumn of 1709.

She watched over him with the tenderest care: no wife could have more devotedly attended a husband. She sat up with him the last six nights, and saw him close his eyes in death with extreme sorrow.

Sarah, Duchess of Marlborough, was not in London at the time the prince was seized with this illness. She was at Windsor, residing at the lodge, which Anne, in their days of friendship, had given her, "*for her life.*" But, as soon as she heard of her mistress's distress, she sent a note, offering her services, but not forgetting to allude to her majesty's late "*ill-usage*" of her.

This, however, was not enough: she ordered her carriage at midnight, and reached the palace next morning, sending another note to the queen, who was watching by her husband's sick-bed, requesting admission.

Anne was taken by surprise: she consented, but received her coolly. However, the duchess, who certainly was very strongly attached to her, would not be repelled. She stayed by her mistress's side; she helped her to the utmost of her power; and when the prince was no more, she tenderly led her away from the chambers of death.

Then, when she had conducted her into her own private closet, she knelt down at her feet and tried to soothe her, using the most affectionate expressions. If she could have overcome her

own temper, if she could have regained her place in her mistress's heart, it would have been far better for Anne.

But the queen could not, even at this moment, forget or forgive her. She only endured her; and giving her watch into the duchess's hand, she desired her to retire till a certain time had passed, and to "*send Mrs. Masham in.*"

The fiery duchess could not bear this: she could not bring herself to send in the favourite woman, as desired; and when the time had passed, she returned, merely saying, "Your majesty may send for Mrs. Masham, at St. James's, when and how you please."

Mrs. Masham *was* sent for, and nothing more could be done.

The duchess should now have retired and have given up all further attempts to regain her former station; but she would not be at rest. She sent the queen a long list of her own merits and services: she sent her, too, a volume of sermons, and "the Whole Duty of Man," with the page doubled down at the chapter on friendship.

It would not do: the queen had made up her mind to dismiss the Duke of Marlborough and her Whig ministers; and a very short time after this incident, her determination was made public.

The duchess, meanwhile, had gone into the country, and she was trying to keep herself quiet, when the news reached her, coupled with a report that she was herself accused of having spoken disrespectfully of the queen.

This was too much for her to bear. She came

posting up to town in a fury, drove to Kensington Palace, and forced herself into the queen's presence, desiring to know who had dared to accuse her of saying any thing disrespectful of her majesty.

The queen kept her temper, only replying that she should make no answer. The duchess still persisting, her majesty moved towards the door, repeating, "I shall make no answer to any thing you say."

The duchess wept with mixed anger and sorrow, but went on with the same story; the queen again saying, "You shall have no answer:"—and then the duchess violently exclaimed, "You will certainly suffer for your cruelty in this world or the next."—"That is my business," said the queen, leaving the room, and shutting the door.

Yet the poor humbled duchess was not satisfied: she sat down in the adjoining gallery, to wipe away her tears and recover her composure; and then returning to the door of the queen's closet, she said she would not go "any more to the Lodge at Windsor, if the queen would not be easy to see her." The queen told her she might do as she pleased; and the duchess left the palace: and Sarah Jennings and Queen Anne never met again.

In the mean time the Duke of Marlborough and all his Whig friends were dismissed from the queen's counsels. It is probable that their fall was entirely owing to Anne's dislike to her former friend; for, unfortunately, the duchess was so accustomed to rule over all the heads of that

party, that Anne found it impossible to dismiss *her* without dismissing *them*.

She found that the duchess would not resign her offices about her person, and therefore made up her mind to remove her. She sent to demand the gold key which the duchess carried as Mistress of the Robes, and which she ought to have given up long before, of her own accord.



Interview between Queen Anne and the Duke of Marlborough.

Worst of all, the duchess sent her husband, the great general, the conqueror of Europe, to beg for a short delay, only a few weeks. The queen's only reply was to desire that the key might be sent in three days. Marlborough still importuned her, and then she told him he should have but two days. That night the duchess sent him back with the key.

When there was no further hope of any reconciliation, the duke and duchess went abroad, *a had no more to do with the reign of Queen An*

The duke bore his disgrace with dignity and mildness; but not so the duchess.

She had a little portrait of Anne, set round with diamonds, which was one of Anne's first presents to her; and she was spiteful enough to take it out of the frame and give it to an old woman who dealt about the court in fans, toys, old china, &c. telling her she might sell it for any thing she could get, which was ten pounds.

After Anne's death she published part of the private and confidential letters which the queen had written her. She lived for thirty years after the death of her royal mistress; and a little before she died, was known to complain that all the people in the world were so disagreeable, she had never found any thing to love.

But I must go on with Queen Anne. You remember that she had a brother, and that her father, James the Second, had forbidden her to wear the English crown, or stand in the way of his rights.

Now her mind misgave her very much respecting her own conduct in having accepted the throne; and as she grew older, she became more and more uneasy. She did not like the family who were destined by the parliament to succeed her, and believed her brother was the real heir.

But she had not courage to give up her crown while living; and continued to trifle with her conscience, though all the time avowing to her intimate friends her belief that her brother ought to have it.

Some say that she seriously proposed at one

time yielding it up to her brother; but on consulting Bishop Wilkins, he told her that if she did, she would be in the Tower in a month, and dead in three months; and, upon this, Anne dropped all thoughts of so doing.

The war between England and France was finished, and peace was concluded in 1713; and from this time to the close of the queen's life there was peace in England.

She had a secret interview with her brother, the Pretender; but it was not possible for her, however well disposed to him, *now* to alter the succession in his favour.

In 1714, Anne's health rapidly declined. She did, however, outlive the Electress Sophia of Hanover, who was the successor appointed by parliament; but this did not make any difference as to the claims of the Pretender, since the Electress's son, afterwards George the First, was now the heir.

The poor queen's latter days were greatly disturbed by disputes among her ministers, who could not agree upon their measures; and, at length, after a very fatiguing day and night of consultation among them, at which she was obliged to be present, she was seized with apoplexy, and died on the first of August, 1714, in her fiftieth year, having reigned twelve years and four months.

ENGLAND

AND ITS

PEOPLE.

PART VI.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HOULSTON AND CO.

65, Paternoster-Row.

1839.



ENGLAND AND ITS PEOPLE.

THE HOUSE OF HANOVER.

GEORGE I. 1714—1727.



George I.



Gentlemen's Costume.

HISTORIANS have called Queen Anne the last *Stuart*. Yet George the First, though of more

nation as were before well-disposed towards the Stuarts, were the less inclined to like the Hanoverian monarch, when they saw him unable to express himself fluently in their native tongue, and little acquainted with them or their interests.

It was just after this rebellion had been suppressed, and when the people were far from being satisfied with the government, that Sir Robert Walpole and the king's other ministers thought that if the parliament were dissolved, another would be chosen which would be more favourable to the Stuarts.

They therefore devised a bill for making that and future parliaments to be of seven years' duration, unless dissolved by the king's pleasure, or on occasion of his death.

This was a very bold measure; as the parliament which made the change had only been chosen for three years.

It was perhaps necessary at that period, when the nation was in danger of a foreign invasion, and there was great reason to fear a new parliament would not have done its duty so well as the old.

But many good men have since lamented the change, and have thought it would be very desirable to return to the former plan of a new parliament every three years.

On the other hand, some consider that this measure rendered the parliament far more independent of the influence of the lords than it was before.

The son of George the First, who took the title

This led him to disregard the mischief he was doing by bribing at elections, and afterwards bribing members of parliament to vote with him. So long as he could carry his point he was not scrupulous in this matter.

And yet, in spite of this great blemish, he was a very valuable minister, and had many fine qualities.

Both George the First and his son felt his value most strongly; and it was remarkable that though they hardly agreed in any thing else, they did in affection for him.

It is a curious circumstance, that our first George could scarcely speak any English, nor his minister any French; they were therefore obliged to transact all their business in Latin.

Neither were particularly ready in *that* language either; so that Walpole used to say, that, during the reign of George the First, he governed the kingdom by means of bad Latin.

The death of George the First was sudden. He had left England on a visit to Hanover, on the third of June, 1727, but was taken ill on the journey, and died upon the tenth instant, just before reaching Osnaburgh.

His unfortunate wife died just seven months before him: her name was Sophia of Zell. She was confined for no less than thirty-two years in a castle of her husband's, as is generally believed very innocent of any crime, though George might and probably *did* believe her unworthy of his affection.

Her son, George the Second, doated upon her,

and was firmly persuaded of her innocence; but he was never allowed to see her, though he once went to the castle where she was confined for that purpose.

His wife, also, the future Queen Caroline, believed her to be an injured and guiltless woman.

Whether it were so or not, no one can hear of her long captivity, and of her earnest protestations of innocence, knowing, at the same time, that she had no fair trial, without feeling the strongest indignation at the cruelty and tyranny of her husband.

Compared to conduct like this, even that of Henry the Eighth may be regarded as merciful.*

GEORGE II. 1727—1760.

The Prince of Wales, now George the Second, was the only son of his father by Sophia of Zell, and was forty-four years of age when he came to the throne.

He was, as we have said, more liked than his father, in consequence of his better acquaintance with the English; and yet was he not by any means a popular monarch.

He was reserved, and cautious, and cold in his manners, yet both violent and obstinate in his temper; but he had the great advantage of good sense, and a quicker perception of what was right, than his father appears to have had.

* See the account of Sophia of Zell, in Coxe's *Memoirs of Sir Robert Walpole*, Vol. ii. p. 260, 8vo. edition.

of Prince of Wales, was married to a German princess, a very superior woman, who made herself popular among the English.

Both she and her husband were far more beloved among the people than George the First was, and there was some jealousy in consequence of this between the father and son.

Busy and mischievous people increased this till it became a quarrel; and the friends of the king were always the enemies of the prince.

It was altogether a very disagreeable time in our national history; and the greatest distress was occasioned throughout the country by a vast speculation, called afterwards, the South Sea Bubble.

I know that I cannot explain what this was, in such a manner as that one who does not understand the way in which great commercial business is carried on, can enter into my meaning.

I shall not therefore say more than that a scheme was formed by a man of the name of Blunt, into which he persuaded a great many people to enter, under the notion that they would gain a great deal of money thereby.

These, in their turn, persuaded others, and many persons embarked their whole property in the South Sea Scheme, and lost every farthing they possessed.

Nothing could exceed the eagerness to run into this scheme, and the despair and misery when it was found to be all a bubble.

However, though many were utterly ruined, the panic after a time passed away, and the nation returned to tranquillity.

But it was astonishing to see the effect which this affair had upon the nation at large. It seemed as if the spirit of gambling had taken entire possession of the people for a time.

On the faith of what they were to get by this South Sea Scheme, people indulged themselves in every luxury and extravagance; and there was a general complaint among all sober-minded persons of the prodigious increase of vice and irreligion.

The king had an able, powerful minister at this time, named Sir Robert Walpole. He was a man of strong sense, great courage, and desired the good of his country.

But, finding the court and government in a lamentable state of corruption, he persuaded himself that it would be impossible for him to preserve power unless *he* also bribed people to serve his purposes.

There is this difference between bribery in a minister and in a mere court servant, that the minister has it in his power to do far more extensive mischief.

He can make his influence felt over the whole country; and when once people are accustomed to be paid for their votes, the practice will be transmitted from father to son, and it will be looked on at length as no sin to take or give a bribe.

Sir Robert Walpole thought much of preserving the House of Hanover on the throne; and *he* also found it very necessary to struggle against the arts of the king's mistresses and creatures.

He would not suffer his favourites to govern him; and the sure way for them to lose their influence over him, was to interfere with public matters.

He was, however, extremely covetous and narrow. This disposition was shewn in a remarkable instance of meanness, not to say dishonesty, when he came to the throne.

The Archbishop of Canterbury gave him the will of his father, George the First, soon after his death. He thrust it into his bosom, walked out, and never brought it forward: it happened, however, that there was another copy in possession of one of the late king's mistresses, and she, knowing it contained a legacy of £50,000 to her daughter, consulted an attorney.

He applied to the king, and, dreading to have the will (which doubtless contained other legacies) brought forward, his majesty paid the money, which else, in all probability, he would never have done.

He had the highest opinion of his Queen Caroline, who was a worthy and also a clever and very intelligent woman.

She used to enjoy the company of men of learning, and particularly liked to converse with divines, as she was well read in her Bible, and extremely interested in all religious questions.

She was sincerely devout and earnest in the performance of her religious duties, and in her last severe sufferings shewed a patience and submission which impressed all hearts.

She was also a good mother, and took great pains with the education of her children.

Sir Robert Walpole was a still greater favourite with George the Second than with his father; and, though many great and able men appeared during this reign, he managed to keep nearly supreme power in his own hands till almost the close of it.

He was not, if we may judge by the many riots which took place during his ministry, a favourite with the common people; they disliked some of his acts very much.

The brutal manner in which these riots were conducted called for much temper and judgment in dealing with them.

Highway robbery was then so common, that travelling without a number of attendants and arms was hardly safe; and so low were morals, that many young gentlemen of respectable family were known to have joined in the schemes of robbers.

A man of the name of Wilson, who had been a daring culprit, was sentenced to be hanged at Edinburgh; and, after the execution, the mob threw stones at a Captain Porteous, who was appointed to superintend it.

Porteous hastily ordered his soldiers to fire, when five people were killed and several wounded.

As he had fired without any orders from the magistrates, Captain Porteous was, in his turn, tried for murder, and was condemned to death.

But as it was found that stones of considerable size had been thrown at him and his men, and

the jury could not agree about the terms of the verdict, Queen Caroline, who was regent in the absence of her husband in Hanover, sent a respite for six weeks, for the purpose of giving time to enquire into the case.

The mob, being greatly enraged at this delay, which they thought was the same thing as a pardon, determined to take the law into their own hands; and, accordingly, they rose suddenly in the night, seized the city gates, drove out the magistrates, and proceeded to break open the prison where Porteous was confined.



Edinburgh Mob breaking open the Prison.

Nothing could exceed the determination of these people. It was a long time before they

could make any impression on the gate of the prison; but, at length, one of them set it on fire, and as soon as they got admission, they released all the prisoners except Porteous.

This unhappy man they dragged away with them, and having broken into a shop, they took out a coil of ropes, and hung him close to the usual place of execution.

They then dispersed quietly, and by the next morning Edinburgh was as peaceable as usual: no efforts could reach these offenders; so well was the secret kept, that no one was ever able to bring them to justice, though several were imprisoned on suspicion of being concerned in the business, and large rewards were offered.

Neither George the First, nor his son, were in themselves encouragers of painting or poetry; but Queen Caroline's influence led the latter to patronize these arts more than by his own taste he would have been inclined to do: and the reign of George the Second was distinguished by many eminent writers and artists.

Among the painters we must mention Hogarth, whose pictures are real histories, and shew in a very striking way the manners of his time.

For instance, in his four pictures entitled, "The Four Times of the Day," he shews us London as it then appeared, together with the dresses and humours of the period.

He also published series of pictures, in which he endeavoured to shew the progress of Industry and of Idleness in the History of two Apprentices, one an idle youth who falls into vice and poverty,



The Politician, from Hogarth.

e other industrious, and receiving the reward of
s industry.

These last pictures, twelve in number, were
adly welcomed by the more sober London citi-
ns, who used to hang them up in their parlours
lessons to their children and servants.

Another series of Hogarth's pictures was his
Four Stages of Cruelty," in which a savage boy,
ho begins his career by being cruel to animals,
mes at last to commit a shocking murder.

He also described the progress of an Election for a Member of Parliament, in four different pictures, abounding in wit and nature.

In drawing these pictures he frequently introduced real likenesses of celebrated characters of the day.

It is remarkable that the Prince of Wales, the eldest son of George the Second, whose name was Frederic, was on no better terms with *his* father than George the Second had himself been on with George the First.

Prince Frederic was born in 1707, and he had lived at Hanover till he was twenty-one years of age, which was by no means agreeable to the English, who, of course, wished their future king to grow up among them.

The king long refused to send for his son, being, it was thought, apprehensive lest some of the discontented party, who disliked Sir Robert Walpole's government, might tamper with him and persuade him to join them.

In the mean time, the young prince fell in love with his cousin, the Princess of Prussia; but, unfortunately, the King of England and the King of Prussia could not agree; and George the Second sent hastily for his son, and commanded him to think no more of the lady.

The prince came, as his father desired: he proved, however, not so submissive to the king's future commands; for when, after a little time, it was proposed that he should marry the Princess of Saxe Gotha, he warmly remonstrated on *the cruelty* of being ordered to connect himself

with a stranger, when his heart was already given to the Princess of Prussia.

Many difficulties occurred; but, at length, the young man's resolution was conquered, and he married as his father desired: nor did he repent of this, for his wife was a pleasing and beautiful woman, and he was happy with her.

Still there were constant occasions of difference between himself and the king. Their *tastes* were entirely opposite: the prince loved the fine arts, and of course sought the society of men of letters, most of whom were of the party opposed to the king and his minister.

The prince and his friends also complained that the king did not allow him a handsome income; and as his majesty refused to increase it, the matter was brought before parliament, which made the disagreement public, and part of the nation sided with the father, while the other part went with the son.

At length, so high did the quarrel run, that the king ordered the prince to leave the royal palace at St. James's with all his family; and when he had accordingly removed, his majesty forbade all persons who paid their court to his son from being admitted to visit himself.

The quarrel to which I have alluded, took place in 1737; and in that year the nation sustained a loss in Queen Caroline. She died on the twentieth of November, after some severe suffering.

The king's grief at her loss was extreme: on no other occasion was he known to have shewn much feeling; but he could not for a length of

time after her death see Sir Robert Walpole without bursting into tears.

She had earnestly recommended the king on her death-bed never to part with this minister, to whom she was much attached.

She sent her blessing to the prince and a message of forgiveness, and said she would have seen him, but that she feared it would only distress and irritate the king.

She was, perhaps, too severe towards this son: and many persons thought that she did not do all that was in her power to reconcile him to his father: but it is very difficult, at this period, to find out the exact truth; and it is probable there were many meddling persons who misrepresented the prince's conduct to her.

The year after her death, (1738,) the Princess of Wales had a son, who was baptized by the name of George, being afterwards our King George the Third. This event however made no difference in the treatment which the prince received from his father. He still remained in banishment from the court; and he constantly voted against Sir Robert Walpole's measures.

The next year (1739) was remarkable for the beginning of a war with Spain, the occasion of which was in a great measure the cruelties and depredations committed by Spanish merchants resident in South America upon English merchant-vessels.

It was found that many English vessels on these coasts had been plundered, and the English crews sent to work in the Spanish mines.

After several attempts to negotiate, war was declared, and a brave English sailor of the name of *George Anson* was sent with a fleet of ships, to protect the English on the American coasts, and to attack the Spaniards.

Commodore Anson left England in September 1740, and sailed towards Cape Horn. He and the brave crews of his fleet underwent many hardships; and, at length, only the vessel in which he himself sailed was left. But in this ship, and with a very diseased crew, he made some valuable prizes, and returned to England after an absence of three years and nine months.



Commodore Anson's Voyage.

Anson brought some fine fruits and flowers to England from the islands of the South Sea: among these, the fine apricot which is called the

Anson apricot, in memory of him, and which grew on the island of Juan Fernandez.

The son of James the Second, who had made an attempt to excite rebellion in Scotland and England in the reign of George the First, was now too old to engage personally in such plots; but his grandson, Charles Edward, who was called the *Young Pretender*, felt the strongest ambition to mount the throne of his father.

He had no great expectation of support from France; but he was deceived by the reports of several adventurers in Scotland, who persuaded him that if he were but seen in Scotland, numbers would flock to his standard.

King George was at this time in Germany, and the Duke of Cumberland, who commanded the English forces, was in Flanders, which afforded a favourable opportunity for the enterprise.

The Scots who live in the more mountainous northern parts of Scotland are called *Highlanders*; and these people were a bold race of men, passionately attached to their country and the old line of kings, while they held the *Hanoverian* government in detestation.

They had also great reason to complain of the manner in which they had lately been treated by the English: a regiment of *Highlanders* had been formed for the defence of Great Britain generally, but under a promise that the men should not be sent abroad.

This promise was not kept: the poor men were embarked, in spite of all their remonstrances, for *Flanders*; and others, finding how their comrades

had been deceived, took the liberty of setting out for Scotland, instead of following them into the vessels.

The poor creatures were ignorant of the roads, and their dress and dialect made it impossible to disguise themselves; they were therefore very soon overtaken by a body of horse sent after them, and were brought back to London, where they were regularly tried for desertion, and three were shot, while the rest were sent to work in the plantations.

The fate of these Highlanders was a most pitiable one. They seem to have had no idea that they were doing any thing wrong in deserting. They said they had promised to act as soldiers to King George, provided they were not sent abroad; and as soon as they found this promise broken they thought themselves at liberty to return.

To punish people so ignorant of the rules of warlike discipline, after having committed an act of deception towards them, was generally thought, by those who thought at all, a cruel act.

These men too were of some consequence in their own country, and their relations and friends vowed revenge against the English government. To this, in a great measure, may be attributed the eager welcome they gave to the Young Pretender.

Charles Edward landed in Scotland early in the month of August, 1745, with a very small number of friends and followers; but in a few days he was joined by as many as twelve hundred men, and these gained several advantages over

the English troops, which they used very generously.

At first, the English government would not be persuaded that there was any real danger from this conspiracy; but it was soon found to be a more serious thing: and a reward of £30,000 was offered to any person who would apprehend the Pretender. The Pretender, in his turn, offered the like reward for the head of King George.

The king was sent for, and soon returned from Germany; and preparations were made to conquer the Highlanders and Charles Edward. The bulk of the English nation was steadily loyal to the House of Hanover.

Meantime, however, the Pretender's army was greatly increased, and he had actually taken Edinburgh, and his father proclaimed king, and himself regent.

Not *all* the Highland chiefs however were attached to the Stuarts. Some were in the interest of King George: and the Duke of Argyle, who possessed great power in Scotland, exerted himself to bring back the people to their allegiance. In fact, it was soon found, that even in Scotland the Pretender's friends had much less influence than he and his father had supposed.

Had Charles Edward however confined himself to that kingdom, he might have maintained a very long and perhaps successful struggle. But *having* resolved to attack the King of England in *his own country*, he pushed on too rashly, and *when* within a hundred miles of London *was*

obliged to retreat with great loss and disadvantage.

His Highland soldiers behaved with wonderful gentleness and humanity towards all their captives, and to the people of the towns through which they passed; and it was a disgraceful fact, that these barbarians, as they were called, proved themselves, on this occasion, far superior to the English in every noble and generous quality.

They committed no outrage; they were restrained from all acts of cruelty; they carried off all their sick. It was plain they must now be conquered; yet still they remained faithful to Charles Edward.



Battle of Culloden.

At length, after various other defeats and
C O

losses, the whole Highland army was completely beaten at the battle of Culloden, which took place on the twelfth of April, 1746, and Charles himself was obliged to fly alone from the field.

He wandered about for five months, during all which time he was constantly in danger of capture: often surrounded by the English troops, sometimes escaping in female attire, and obliged to depend on the fidelity of the poorest of the people. Yet though £30,000 were offered for his head, not one of these poor creatures betrayed him, and at length they enabled him to escape to France.

No words can be too strong for the occasion, when the cruelty of the English towards the Highlanders is our subject. Perhaps there is not such another blot on our national history as this.

The only crime of these poor people was in following their leaders to support an unfortunate prince whose claims to reign *in Scotland* seemed to them perhaps pretty strong; yet they were dealt with in the most ferocious manner.

Women and children, after being subjected to every barbarity, were turned out to starve, half-naked, upon the barren heaths. Every habitation belonging to some of the hostile clans was destroyed, all the cattle and provisions carried off, the men hunted like wild beasts on the mountains.

In a few days there was not a dwelling, nor a human being, nor an animal, to be seen in the compass of fifty miles: all was ruin and silence.

This was dreadful retribution. The *heads* of

the people, meanwhile, were not spared; and it must be owned they deserved severity far more than their poor clansmen. Several of them perished on the scaffold. Many were fined and banished.

So ended the last attempt of the Stuarts to reign in Great Britain. The old Pretender, son of James the Second, did not, however, die until the year 1765, in the fifth year of the reign of George the Third.

The quarrels between George the Second and his son were terminated by the death of the latter in 1751. Frederic's eldest son then succeeded to the title of Prince of Wales, and, at the death of his grandfather in 1760, was proclaimed king by the title of George the Third.

GEORGE III. 1760—1820.

I have not entered into any particulars of the wars of George the Second's reign, because our history is of England and its people, and there is little to interest in accounts of battles fought to extend our dominion in different parts of the world.

It is enough here just to say, that the English arms obtained very great honour during the latter part of this reign, and were every where triumphant.

At this time our American settlements were under English government: there was no thought then of their being separated from the mother

country; consequently, whenever they wanted aid and defence, they applied to England for it. Thus it was that we were drawn into a very terrible war with the French in America.

But when George the Third came to the throne, a grand dispute arose between the American colonies and the English government. The king and ministry of Great Britain insisted upon having a right to tax all British subjects, in whatever part of the globe they might reside, just the same as the English were taxed in England.

The Americans would not agree to this. They had a sort of parliament of their own, chosen among themselves, and they thought it very unjust, that, because their fathers were Englishmen, they should be for ever compelled to pay tribute to English sovereigns. They declared that such taxes should not be imposed upon them without their own consent.

Our government however persisted; and in consequence of this obstinacy the thirteen United States revolted, and formed themselves into an independent government.

Then a long and bloody war took place; the first regular battle between the Americans and English being fought in June 1775; and it was not till July 1784 that peace was again established between them; the Americans having completely succeeded in proving both their power and fitness to be independent of the mother country.

I shall only further say, that they have gone on increasing rapidly in strength and riches ever

since, and that we have found them our valuable allies in peace, and our most formidable foes in war.

This contest was a very injurious one to the English nation. It greatly impoverished the people, and led to the loss of thousands of valuable lives. It was never a popular war in England; but the king was extremely reluctant to submit to peace, or allow the colonies to be independent.

George the Third had chiefly been brought up by his mother, a princess of the House of Saxe Gotha, who, though a clever and sensible woman, entertained some ideas which were not suitable *to the kind* of government which England enjoys.

She was accustomed in her father's little court, to see his subjects treated like servants: he was the master and magistrate over them. And when she found that her father-in-law, George the Second, was obliged to consult his parliament and ministers on every public occasion, she hardly allowed it to be a real monarchy.

Hence, she laboured to persuade her son to be his own minister, and to keep as much power as possible. "George, be KING," she often said to him, and he endeavoured to obey her.

He was only a boy of thirteen on the death of his father, the Prince of Wales, and, consequently, was easily governed by those around him. Though his governor and tutor were excellent men, and, had they been allowed, would have guided him right, they were soon wearied of their office by finding that his mother surrounded

him with associates whom they could not approve of.

The principal of these was the Earl of Bute, a man of no ability, and of bad political principles; who misled the young prince in every possible way, and to whose wrong counsels may in a great measure be imputed his worst errors.

Another unfortunate circumstance was, that he was thwarted in his attachment to a lady of the English court.

He had been told by his father, when only a child, that if he pleased he should have an English wife when he grew up; and though the law was against one of the royal family marrying a subject, it is probable, had his wishes been made known to parliament and the nation, the difficulty would have been overcome.

The Earl of Bute however and his mother were warmly opposed to the idea, and prevailed with him to give it entirely up, without taking the sense of the nation on the question at all; and the prince yielded.

He afterwards married the Princess Charlotte of Strelitz Mecklenburg; and this connexion proved more to his happiness than could have been expected after his first disappointment.

The new queen was blameless in her conduct as a wife, and she and her husband lived for many years in harmony; but she did not agree with the king's eldest sister, who afterwards married the Duke of Brunswick: and it was supposed to be in consequence of this, that Queen Charlotte always disliked this lady's daughter

, many years after, she became the wife of
on, George the Fourth.

was during the continuance of the American
namely, in 1780, that the peace of the city
London was disturbed by some of the worst
ever known to have taken place there.

Nothing could shew more strongly the evils of
ance and bigotry in a nation than these riots.
Occasion of them was as follows.

bill had been passed in parliament for the
of Roman Catholics. Ever since the reigns
of Stuarts, the nation had retained so great a
avest Popery should ever be again the ruling
on, that very severe laws had been passed
st Catholics.

ish priests were visited with the severest
ties; the heirs of Catholics, if educated
d, were to forfeit their estates; and there
several other most oppressive statutes aimed
followers of the ancient religion.

ow that Protestantism was firmly established,
ned but just that these rigorous laws should
tened; and that if a Catholic were a good
t, he should no longer be treated like a

liament, therefore, abolished the worst of
statutes. But some bigoted men, out of
took it into their heads that the Protestant
n was endangered by this act of clemency;
ne of them, Lord George Gordon, a man of
enthusiasm, and alike violent and weak,
t upon him on all occasions to excite the
ensions of the ignorant multitude, and

make them believe that Popery was going to be brought in; thereby inflaming them in the most desperate manner, both against the Catholics and those who advocated their cause.

Lord George Gordon had probably no intention of leading the people to deeds such as followed; but he who inflames the passions of an ignorant mob cannot be called innocent of their after acts.

On the second of June, 1780, Lord George Gordon carried up a petition to parliament, signed by an immense number of persons, members of an association, calling itself the Protestant Association. He was not content with taking it himself, but chose to be accompanied by 20,000 persons, all wearing blue cockades: these all stationed themselves round the houses of parliament.

While the petition (which, of course, was against the late act of relief to Catholics) was under discussion, Lord George often went out to tell the people what was going on, and who were its principal opponents. It was soon thrown out, one hundred and ninety-two members being against it, and only six for receiving it.

At first the people had been tolerably quiet; but they soon became inflamed by what they heard of their want of success, and urged one another to attack different members of the houses as they passed through the streets. They then demolished two Roman Catholic chapels, and dispersed for the time; but two days after, London presented a most dreadful scene of outrage.

Thirty-six fires might be seen burning at one time. Catholic chapels and private dwellings

*Riots in London.*

were destroyed by the mob and pillaged, and many lives lost. Lord and Lady Mansfield's house, among others, with all the valuable library and furniture were wholly consumed, and they themselves only escaped by a back door with the utmost difficulty.

The mob then went to Newgate, broke it open, and set the prisoners at liberty. The government soon however summoned troops from all quarters; and the people being wholly undisciplined, were easily dispersed. And so ended the famous "NO POPERY" riots.

As for Lord George Gordon, he was sent to the Tower, and afterwards tried for high treason; but it did not appear to the jury that his crime answered that description, though no doubt he had been guilty of exciting the people to these excesses, and he was acquitted of the capital charge.

And now occurred some events in France, which are so closely connected with English history that they cannot be passed over; though, in order to make them intelligible, I must go back a little way, and give an account of the state of France before the Revolution, as it is called.

The French had been for a number of years an exceedingly oppressed people. The middle and lower orders were worn out by the exactions of their rulers. I will mention one of these in particular.

In earlier times the number of *Nobles* in France was not large: there were not more than between two and three hundred families of the old nobility in the best days of that country.

But as the court grew more corrupt, it became a practice to *sell* the honours of nobility, and also to attach its privileges to a great many employments in the state; so that only a few years before the time of which I am writing, it was reckoned that there were four thousand employments purchasable, all of which gave the privileges of nobility to those who held them.

When we come to enquire what those privileges were, we shall soon see how much reason the *ignoble* part of the people had to complain.

All the nobles were exempt from the payment of taxes; and the more there were to share this exemption, the heavier was the burden of the people, who had still to raise the same sums for taxes, though the richer persons did not help them in paying.

The king was enriched by selling titles of no-

bility; the nobles were enriched by being freed from payment of taxes, and by many other privileges, such as having the power to call for the services of the peasantry as freely as if the latter were slaves; but the people were grievously burdened.

They might have supported two or three hundred families in freedom from payment of the taxes to the state; but when the number amounted to thirty thousand it became too heavy to endure.

You may easily conceive the added grievance, when you know that, besides the purchase of employments conferring nobility, *the sons* of these men of rank being too proud to enter into trade, or law, or medicine, all stations of rank in the army or the church were reserved for them.

Thus, however meritorious the *ignoble* class might be, they could not rise but by becoming *noble*; they were cut off from all other honourable distinctions: and the consequence was, that, as they became intelligent and refined, their hatred towards the nobles, whom they regarded as drones, only eating up the stores of the hive, grew stronger and more settled.

This was one of the grievances the nation complained of; another was, that the king had the power to tax his subjects on his own sole authority.

The parliament of Paris was composed entirely of nobles; and till the middle of George the Third's reign, whatever taxes were proposed, the nobles were always exempt from the payment of *them*.

At length, the government being much distressed for money from the extreme difficulty of raising the taxes, a new kind of parliament or *convention* was summoned at Versailles on the twenty-second of February, 1787; and there was an attempt made to impose a general and equal land-tax.

But the nobles prevailed, and shook the burden once more off them. At length, after much quarreling, it was agreed that there should be a grand meeting of the States-general, an assembly which had never been summoned in France since the year 1614: it was composed of three bodies, the nobles, the clergy, and deputies from the people.

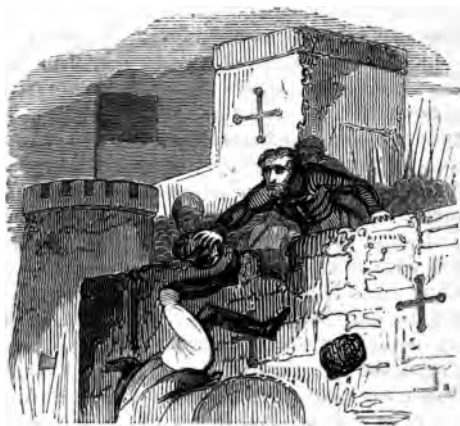
The latter, a thousand in number, soon proved themselves too strong for the other parties; and, at length, the three were blended in one, called the National Assembly, which became in the end the representative of the people wholly, by degrees doing away with all the distinctions of nobility, and even of royalty itself.

While these events were taking place, the King of England and his people looked on, surprised, not knowing what would next ensue.

The king, indeed, and those who were of the Tory party, were always inclined to look with dread on the attempts of the people to obtain a more just distribution of public burdens: and it could not be denied that there was great danger from a passionate, ill-disciplined nation, long oppressed and suffering, breaking loose from its *fetters* all at once, and burning with anger against those who had kept it in bondage.

Others, however, who looked on both sides of the question, rejoiced in the French Revolution, as it was called, and hoped the wisest and best of the leaders in it would be able to conduct everything to a happy issue.

But the lower orders of the French people, who had been hardened by long oppression, and deposed by ignorance, now began to assume more and more power.



Pulling down the Bastille.

One of their first acts was to pull down the Bastille, a gloomy prison in Paris, where many cruelties had been committed, and they now took every occasion to assemble in large bodies carrying terror wherever they went.

They were led on by men of some talent and influence, who managed their violence so as to obtain advantages for themselves; and the friends of good government in England, who had at first rejoiced in the French Revolution, began to tremble and recall their approbation.

Though I have hitherto said so little of foreign nations, it is impossible to give you any idea of the state of England and its people in the reign of George the Third, without taking the French Revolution into the account.

The English nation was, for a length of time, influenced in a remarkable degree by this event, the Tories, with whom were a great part of the lower and higher orders of the people, being warmly opposed to the revolution, and rendered particularly hostile to any free expression of sentiments by their dread of what was passing in France, and the Whigs too much inclined to palliate and make excuses for the wicked things which were done in the name of liberty.—

Thus these two great parties were violently opposed to each other. The leader of the Tory party in the House of Commons was Mr. Pitt, the leader of the Whigs, Mr. Fox.

When we look back at what passed a number of years ago, it is not difficult to understand why very good men have differed extremely on some great political question: and we can often see pretty clearly where each was right and each wrong.

It would have been very strange indeed, if humane and religious men had not been greatly

shocked when they found what wicked actions were perpetrated at this time in France; and in their zeal to prevent any inroads of the same spirit here, nothing was more natural than that they should become suspicious of any of their own countrymen who were friends to the chief agents of this great revolution abroad.

But they did not draw the distinction between rejoicing at the overthrow of a bad form of government and rejoicing at these wicked deeds. They communicated their fears to ignorant and violent men, and *these* thought they had a right to abuse and ill-treat every one who was a friend to the French Revolution.

Thus at Birmingham, in the year 1791, a furious mob of people, little better than those low French whom they so much dreaded, attacked the houses and chapels of several Dissenters, and particularly of Dr. Priestley, (who was a man of the greatest private worth and extraordinary talents,) merely because he was known to be a Dissenter and a Whig.

They burned his chapel and house to the ground; and all the noble library and fine philosophical instruments which he had been for many years gathering together, were destroyed at once by these misguided creatures.

The magistrates scarcely interfered to stop the progress of the havock that was going on; and Dr. Priestley and several others were obliged to fly for their lives. Nor could Dr. Priestley bear to remain in England after this usage: so he took his departure in his old age for America, where

several other individuals went also; and there they found a distant grave.

Good men on the Whig side were much afraid at this time that, out of mere apprehension of danger, the Tories, who were in power, would draw the reigns of government here so tight, that there would be little liberty left in England; and as for any reforms of abuses, it was in vain to propose them, for whoever did so was regarded as an enemy to his country.

Yet, in that sad time, there were many noble and dauntless spirits, who, through evil and good report, pleaded that every thing really bad in our government should be cleared away, lest, if abuses were left to accumulate, there might come a time when the people would attack them as violently as the French had done.

Among other things, they desired to see all British subjects left free to worship God according to their own consciences; and they contended that it was great oppression not to allow a good citizen to serve in any office of state, without compelling him to go to church, or take the Sacrament there, when he was perhaps a Dissenter.

Year after year they asked for this simple act of justice; but they were met only by refusals or taunts: and it was not till so late as 1828 that the Test Act, which thus endeavoured to keep a Dissenter from performing useful and honourable service to his country, was repealed: so long did fear prevent a government from withdrawing an oppressive law which could only make it odious.

Very hard battles were fought also between the Whigs and Tories on several other questions; and there was one subject which occasioned much division, and which was not so much a party question as a question of *interest*: this was the African Slave-Trade.

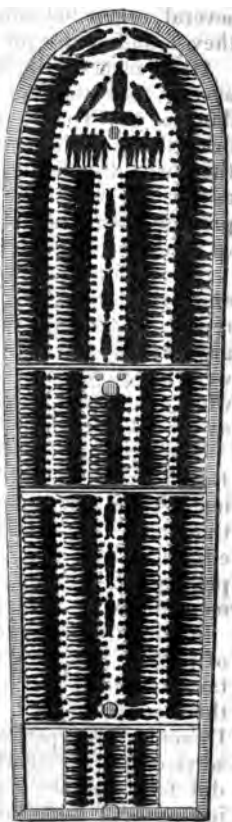
For a long time previous to this, England had been disgraced by partaking in the shameful traffic in African men and women who were sold in the West Indies as slaves to the best bidder.

English ships and captains used to go to the coast of Africa, to pick up these poor creatures, and carry them to the West Indies.

Here they were obliged to work, and often died miserably, or lived very unhappily.

It was in the year 1788, that the subject was first brought before parliament.

Many excellent men, as Granville Sharp, and Tho-



A Slave-Ship.

mas Clarkson, had laboured before this, to open the eyes of their countrymen to the guilt of the traffic; but among the merchants who made much money by it, it was very difficult to obtain even a hearing.

However, Mr. Wilberforce (who was the parliamentary leader on this question, though many others worked in the cause with equal diligence) was not deterred, but year after year he brought forward the subject.

He was not *openly* OPPOSED at any time by the ministry, whether Tory or Whig; but the abolition of the Slave-Trade was carried at last by Mr. Fox's ministry in the year 1806.

Slavery, however, was not abolished, though the Slave-Trade was ended. It was reserved for another Whig ministry in the reign of William the Fourth to put an end to this.

The French Revolution, meantime, became more fruitful in wicked deeds every year. I mentioned that the order with which at first it had been conducted, was very much impaired by the lower people, who had completely overpowered the more moderate men.

The unfortunate king, Louis the Sixteenth, had no other wish than to see his subjects happy and at peace. He was, like our Henry the Sixth, of an amiable, gentle temper, and had not that obstinate love of power, or that want of sincerity, which was complained of in Charles the First.

He granted with readiness, and there is no reason to doubt with good faith, the wishes of the people in the beginning of the revolution; but

when foreign powers interfered, and especially when the Prussians and Austrians marched a large army against Paris avowedly to take his part against his people, it furnished the excuse which violent men wanted, to attack the person of the king, under the pretence of providing for the public safety.

The mob, commanded by some ferocious leaders, attacked the royal palace on the night of August the tenth, 1792. Happily, the king and queen had notice of their approach, and escaped to the Hall of the Assembly then sitting. But the faithful Swiss Guards, and a number of gentlemen attached to the royal family, were nearly all massacred by the mob, who penetrated to every part of the palace, furious at the escape of the king and queen.

It seemed as if one universal spirit of madness had seized the Parisians. Meantime, the Austrian army advanced, and it was well known that no mercy would be shewn to the Revolutionists. The heads of the people ordered all suspected persons to be put under confinement; and all citizens, capable of bearing arms, were commanded to hold themselves in readiness at a moment's warning.

The people exclaimed they were ready, but they must purge the nation of the traitors within before they defended it from without; and upon this determination they went from prison to prison: gave a sort of mock trial to the numerous prisoners confined there, (most of whom were merely imprisoned because they were not so violently

opposed to monarchy as the rest,) and in the course of two days executed no less a number than 1085: among these were many priests and some women, particularly a friend of the queen's, the beautiful Princess de Lamballe.

The Prussian and Austrian armies were checked by the General of the French; and their commander retreated, taking a more humble tone towards the Revolutionists.

On the next meeting of the National Convention, it was agreed that royalty should be abolished, that the common titles of respect, Monsieur and Madame, (Sir and Madam,) should also be laid aside, and that the people should only be called citizens. All their elegant customs were abolished: every thing was to be slovenly, coarse, vulgar, and uncivil.

After this, they were not likely to be stayed by any kind of restraint. They had thrown off religion as something quite needless; and now they proceeded to try and condemn their guiltless king.

He was regularly brought to the bar of his subjects on the eleventh of December, 1792, and was publicly executed on the scaffold, January 21, 1793.

The French ambassador was immediately ordered by the English court to quit London, and a message from the king informed both Houses of Parliament shortly afterwards, that the National Convention had declared war with England.

The people of Great Britain were certainly eager for this war. Just indignation against the

French had taken deep root; and they considered themselves bound to attack a nation which had, as it was said, shewn itself hostile to every sacred and social principle.

The Whig party however represented that a large number of the French were as averse to the wicked actions which had lately been committed, as the English could be; that the question of the king's death was, in fact, carried by not a large majority even of the Convention; and that, though for the present these bad counsels had prevailed, there was danger that by going to war we should retard the settlement of the government.

They said, people were very much mistaken, if they thought a few months would be sufficient to conquer the French, (Mr. Pitt, having confidently said, they would not be able to maintain a war more than six months.) The probability was, that it would be a very long, expensive contest, which, instead of checking human misery and crime, would extend them prodigiously.

Whatever may be thought of the necessity of the measure, the event proved, that this last view of the case was right.

In fact, no sooner did the French turn their minds to foreign war, than it became plain that the resources of the nation were much more vast than our minister, Mr. Pitt, had expected. It was then found, not only that there were generals and armies ready to oppose ours, but that the wealth of the country, in spite of all the violent interruptions to trade, was much greater than Englishmen had suspected.

During the long war of twenty-five years which ensued, Great Britain put forth also wonderful strength, having sometimes to sustain a contest with all the great nations of the Continent; and, could our minds have been satisfied with the thought of being at enmity with so many of our fellow-creatures, there would have been enough to make us proud of the courage and success of our countrymen.

But, besides the uncomfortable feeling of being shut up in one's own little island, without intercourse with other nations except in the way of combat, the commerce and condition of the people of England suffered very much in this war.

In order to maintain it, an immense debt was incurred; money was borrowed which will probably never be repaid; and a vast number of expences were created, which never would have been thought of had we been in a state of peace.

Heavy taxes were laid on, many of which have not to this hour been taken off, because there are still war debts to pay.

The prices of some commodities which were prodigiously raised in war, suddenly fell at the return of peace, and occasioned the ruin of whole classes.

In short, war is so terrible a state, and attended with such a multitude of crimes and evils, that it may well be doubted whether a good man of *that* time was not right when he said, "*There never yet was a good war, nor a bad peace.**"

* Dr. Franklin.

During the course of this war, there arose in France that very extraordinary man, Napoleon Bonaparte, who, by great talent and ambition, managed to get the whole French nation into his power, and was elected emperor.

He ruled the people with very despotic sway : indeed, had he not been a most resolute and even tyrannical man, he probably would soon have been overthrown ; and it was better for the French to be under some government, however harsh, than to remain in the state of anarchy which had lasted so long.

Fortunately for them, Bonaparte, though a selfish, warlike, ambitious man, was too clever not to see the importance of giving them good laws ; and he formed a code, and raised up many institutions, which improved the people, and made them more fit for a better state of things.

He conquered Italy, and wherever he went he managed to secure the best of every thing for Paris. All the finest pictures and statues were sent to adorn his capital. He was proud of gathering together every thing splendid.

He made the grandest roads over the most difficult mountain-passes ; he erected splendid buildings ; all his works were magnificent.

But, with all his conquests, he never could subdue England. That little strait which divides us from France was never passed by his troops, though they conquered nearly half the world besides.

At length, this proud emperor pushed his conquests too far : he raised up enemies, who united

their arms, and obtained a grand victory over him; upon which, he sent in a renunciation of the sovereignty of France for himself and his heirs, and retired to the Island of Elba.

Then the Emperors of Russia and of Austria, the Prussians, and English, who had joined together in this war, sent for the nearest relation of the former king, Louis the Sixteenth, who was living in exile in England, and they made him King of the French, under the title of Louis the Eighteenth.



Return of Louis the Eighteenth.

The French received him quietly: not that they were much rejoiced at the return of their old race of kings, but they had become tired of Bonaparte's ambition; and, as they had now obtained a better government, free from the abuses which existed before the revolution, they were

well pleased to make at least a trial of a limited monarchy.

When the allied sovereigns had seated him on the throne, they came over, all but the Emperor of Austria, to England, to pay a visit to our island.

It was in the summer of the year 1814: a time that must always be remarkable as having been the commencement of a state of peace, after a long war; and also as having seen the grand spectacle of two monarchs (one of them, the Emperor Alexander of Russia, the most powerful in Europe) visiting a brother monarch in friendship.



The Allied Sovereigns in England.

But George the Third, though alive, was unable to welcome his guests: for the four years before this time, he had laboured under the af-

fiction of mental derangement; and as he was incapable of performing any of the functions of a king, parliament had made his eldest son, the Prince of Wales, regent.

From one end of the kingdom to another, there was only one burst of joy at the conclusion of war. People could hardly believe it possible that they might now again enjoy the pleasure of intercourse with their fellow-creatures.

The French and English, in particular, who had long been taught to look upon one another as natural enemies, were almost surprised to find in how friendly a manner they could meet.

The English tried to remember that their neighbours no longer held out to them hands embred in their brother's blood. Many of the old Revolutionists were either dead or softened by time; and though the habits of the two nations will always probably differ, it has been found very possible for them to be mutual blessings to one another.

But the peace which began in 1814 was not suffered to last without an interruption. I told you that Bonaparte had renounced the sovereignty of France: but he had not been sincere in this; he had merely taken shelter for a time in the little Island of Elba, and was watching for an opportunity of return.

He had many friends in France, particularly among the soldiery, who had been accustomed to follow him to victory, and were not well pleased at the thoughts of having a peaceful government.

He landed again in France in February 1815,

and was soon joined by some regiments of soldiers. The king, however, still remained at Paris, when he received the astounding intelligence that Marshal Ney, on whom he chiefly relied, was gone over to Bonaparte with all his troops.

Upon this, Louis dared no longer remain. He fled from the capital, and Bonaparte returned to his former palace without having had occasion to fire a single musket.

Great was the astonishment in England when it was found that the French had sent away their king and received back their emperor in so sudden a manner. But all the allied monarchs came to the resolution that they would not suffer this ambitious man to rule again over France.

They said, truly, that he had broken the conditions on which alone he had been allowed his life and liberty; that he had shewn himself the destroyer of European tranquillity, and must now be dealt with as a criminal.

He, on his part, complained of them, and not wholly without justice. They resisted the payment of his pension, which had been agreed upon in the treaty. They divided his private property and that of his family. Such a want of honesty, though it was towards an enemy, was not to be excused, and furnished one pretext for retaliation.

Bonaparte, then, came back. His journey to Paris, as we have said, was beyond all example, under such circumstances, prosperous. Every soldier sent against him joined his force; and in twenty days he was again on the throne of France, without having spilled a drop of blood.

The most formidable preparations were immediately made by the allied sovereigns against him. The Duke of Wellington went over to Belgium to take the command of the armies, which were chiefly British and Prussian, the Russians and Austrians not having yet arrived.



Battle of Waterloo.

It was on the twelfth of June, 1815, that Bonaparte left Paris in order to make an attack on this army before it received the important help of the other allied troops; and on the eighteenth, was fought the terrible and decisive battle of Waterloo, when the French were completely defeated, and Bonaparte was obliged to fly.

This was his final ruin. He tried for several succeeding days to make his escape from different ports of France; but all being narrowly guarded, he determined to throw himself upon

the protection of England, and, accordingly, surrendered himself and his suite to Captain Maitland of the *Bellerophon* man of war.



Bonaparte surrendering himself.

He imagined, by this measure, that he should be regarded solely as an English prisoner; but it was considered that it belonged alike to all the allied sovereigns to decide on his doom: and they decreed that he should be kept under the strictest guard, and conveyed as a state prisoner to the Island of St. Helena, where all hopes of escape would be vain.

Thus ended the *public* history of this remarkable man. He lived in his appointed place of banishment for nearly six years afterwards; unhappy always, and deeply disappointed that his appeal to the English had brought him no better doom.

In the year 1816, the Prince Regent's daughter, the Princess Charlotte, who was the heiress of the British throne, was married to Prince Leopold of Saxe Cobourg.

This princess was popular, and the marriage was approved by her people, and raised many hopes of a reign that might bring blessings upon the nation. But the prospect was soon overclouded ; for, to the inexpressible grief of all, she died the following year, after giving birth to a dead son.

No event, not immediately affecting the personal happiness of individuals, ever was met by deeper concern than this. Every one was a mourner in heart as well as in dress, and it was long the theme of every tongue.

The prince who had thus fallen from domestic happiness and the hope of future dignity, bore his fate with resignation, but with keen feeling. He has since become King of Belgium.

Towards the close of the year 1818, the aged queen also died ; and on the twenty-ninth of January, 1820, King George the Third breathed his last at Windsor, in the eighty-second year of his age, and the sixtieth of his reign, the last eight years of which had been passed in a state of entire seclusion and incapacity.

George the Third and his queen had, in all, fifteen children, most of whom grew up to maturity.

The eldest son, who was regent for nine years during his father's life-time, became now king *under the title of George the Fourth.*

GEORGE IV. 1820—1830.

The long reign of the father, left the son advanced in life when he came to the throne.

He was fifty-eight years of age when George the Third died, and ten more finished his own career.

He was always a dissipated man, and, unfortunately, having no affection for his wife, (the daughter of the Duchess of Brunswick, his father's sister,) he never enjoyed any domestic happiness.

They had one only daughter, the Princess Charlotte, (of whose death we have spoken;) and after her birth, her father and mother had scarcely any intercourse.

The old king was still kind to his daughter-in-law; but the queen extremely disliked her, the more so, because some letters which the princess had written to her father's family at Brunswick, fell into her hands, and there, unfortunately, the princess had spoken very freely of her mother-in-law and sisters in England.

She felt the great difference between the English court and that she had left: she felt she could not love those who surrounded her; more especially there were two or three women whom her husband had himself placed near her, whom she knew to be of bad character: and these things made her very unhappy.

During all the rest of this unfortunate woman's

life, there was no peace for her. She was accused by her husband of the most abandoned wickedness, and was brought to a public trial before the House of Lords, when he came to the throne.

The English people were very indignant at this: they felt that, even supposing Queen Caroline had been guilty of any misdeeds, her husband, who had early abandoned her, and even placed bad companions in her dwelling, was the last person who ought to have been her accuser.

Their feelings with respect to him amounted at this time almost to detestation; and, perhaps, there never, in modern times, has been a monarch more generally unpopular than George the Fourth during the two years which immediately succeeded his accession to the throne.

Prince Leopold, the widowed husband of Queen Caroline's child, visited her. So also did one of the king's own brothers, the Duke of Sussex. Several also of the most respectable of the nobility came forward, and, braving the royal indignation, ventured to pay her the respect due as they conceived to a queen.

However, the coronation of her husband took place, and no room, even as a spectator, was reserved for her. She went to the door of Westminster Abbey, and the doors were closed against her.

She seems to have sunk under this last effort and disappointment, being taken ill a few days after. Her mind was calm and peaceful, though her bodily sufferings were acute. She died pro-

testing her innocence to the last, and forgiving her persecutors.

She was buried at Brunswick; and the circumstances of her funeral will long be remembered by Englishmen. The people, who had been for some time in a state of violent ferment on her behalf, would not suffer her body to leave the land without testifying their indignation at the disrespectful manner in which she had been treated.

They congregated in crowds, and obliged the funeral procession to pass through London, instead of through by-ways, which had been proposed by the government.

A desperate contest took place while they were trying to carry this point, and blood even was shed.

They, however, succeeded; and the body was accompanied by tens of thousands of spectators through the city, and afterwards embarked at Harwich.

In all the enthusiasm of public feeling on this occasion, there was much mixture of mere party-spirit; but no one could forget that it was the king himself who had aroused indignation by his attack upon a defenceless woman whom he had placed in a situation of danger and neglect.

He was himself doubtless an unhappy man, and deserving of great pity; but as he could not but feel that he was unfit to be a guide and help to such a woman as the queen, the people said, justly, that he should have been the more tender and forbearing towards her.

The king's next brother, and the heir of the throne, was the Duke of York; but this prince fell into bad health, and died before him.

The next in order was the Duke of Clarence, who, upon the decease of George the Fourth in 1830, succeeded to the throne under the title of William the Fourth.

During the nineteen years in which George the Fourth held sway as regent and as king, the English people, though opposed to the character and principles of his government, made very decided progress in obtaining useful measures.

Few periods have been more remarkable; but many of the improvements I am about to mention were begun before King George the Third was disqualified from attending to his royal duties, and may properly be said to belong to *his* reign rather than that of his son.

The state of peace however to which the nation returned after a long war, hastened the course of these improvements so much, that many changes which were slow in their beginning, made a most rapid advance in the regency and reign of George the Fourth.

There never was a period since the time of the Reformation, when societies for the diffusion of religious and general knowledge made such progress.

The Bible-Society alone is one of the greatest wonders the world has ever known. Its large *funds* and extensive connexions, the number of *translations* of the Scriptures it has sent out, *and*, still more, the multitude of copies that have

been circulated by its means, are truly astonishing.

The different Book-Societies, some for religious publications only, some for subjects of temporal interest, have brought libraries of cheap and useful volumes to almost every small town in the kingdom.

Sunday and daily schools have also multiplied very much, and churches and Dissenting places of worship are vastly increased.

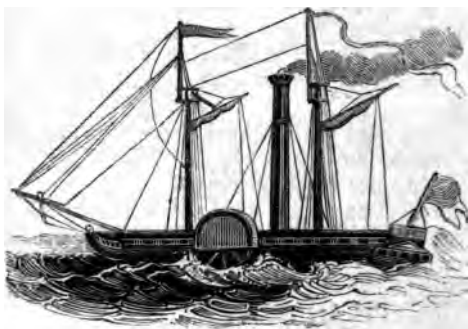
Scarcely any one need be without common instruction in reading and writing; nor need any one who is desirous of possessing a Bible and Testament be without one. How different from the days of Henry the Eighth!

With regard to the common conveniences of life and the improvement of manufactures, &c. so much has been done since the beginning of the reign of George the First, that it is impossible to give an account of it without running into very great length indeed.

The great discovery of the time has been the steam-engine. By applying steam to a vast number of different purposes, we can obtain goods much cheaper and better, and when they *are* made, can convey them by means of the same power to other countries.

Cotton and woollen clothing can now be made in vast quantities for far less expence; books also are printed by steam. Steam is employed at sea; and the consequence is, that farming-produce, and manufactures, and people, are carried from one part of these dominions to another,

wherever they may be wanted, with the greatest ease.



A Steam-Boat.

Thirty years ago, the old sailing-vessels used to be four or five days in coming and going to or from Liverpool or Dublin. Now the steam-boats make this passage in fourteen hours.

And now the people of Ireland find it answer to send millions of eggs and a great deal of poultry to the English markets, and the English in return send back hardware and many other commodities.

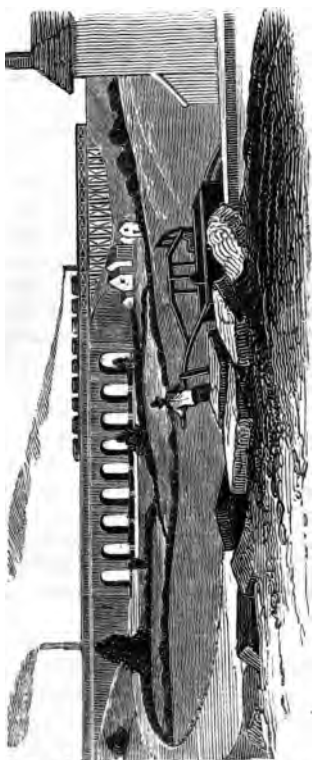
For two or three shillings, a tradesman can go in three or four hours by steam-packet from London, Liverpool, or Bristol, to many different country places which he could not before reach without much expence of time and money. This is surely good for his health, and must add a great deal to his enjoyment.

Steam has been, more recently still, applied to *land* communications.

By the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, carriages full of people and goods are conveyed at the rate of thirty miles in about an hour and half, at a very small expence for each person or for commodities.

It would seem as if nothing can be wanting to an Englishman's bodily comforts, if he has but health and a decent competence: and with regard even to health, it should not be forgotten, that constant discoveries and improvements are taking place in the management of disorders.

That dreadful disease, the small-pox, though still a scourge, and often fatal, is very much less



Manchester and Liverpool Railway.

severe than it used to be; partly because it is treated more skilfully, partly because of the discovery of inoculation, and still more of vaccination.

When people meet with terrible accidents, such as breaking limbs, or when they are obliged to submit to operations, these operations are now far better performed. They are not so painful, and far safer; because surgeons understand better how to manage them.

If people have the misfortune to lose their eyesight, theirs is very often a case that admits of remedy; a very slight degree of pain and some patience and resolution, are often all that are absolutely necessary in their cure by the hands of a skilful surgeon. There are hospitals for all diseases, and able operators always to be found.

Then, when we look round, an Englishman's clothing is cheap and good, often beautiful; his house is well built and well lighted; the roads by which he travels are as smooth as a gravel-walk; fine bridges cross every stream of any importance; the coaches, and caravans, and carts go swiftly, and in general safely.

At his fireside an Englishman has his tea brought him from China; his sugar from the West Indies; his knives and forks are well and serviceably made; his beautifully printed Bible may be bought for a few shillings; he may have his magazine containing news of all the world for a penny per week, and even the poorest cottager has articles of furniture which would have been thought luxuries in Queen Elizabeth's time.

But still it is true that many subjects of the King of Great Britain are unable to enjoy any of these comforts. The vast numbers of the people, and the impossibility of employing all, the bad management of some, the waste of money in some cases, and the great difficulty of reducing taxation after a very long expensive war; all these circumstances and many others, have left the English, and still more the Irish, in a very unequal and sometimes destitute state.

There never was a time when more noble acts of benevolence were performed; no one who looks into the lists of subscribers to charities, but must see that the rich of our day are not niggardly; but still this great inequality exists.

Large sums of money are raised every year to pay poor-rates, yet, poverty not only exists, but increases; nor would the poor be better, nor so well off, if the rich were to give up all their private fortunes, and throw them into one common stock; for it is these private fortunes turned into the pursuits of trade which increase the quantity of our commodities, which enable money to go further by rendering necessities cheaper, and furnish employment and support to millions.

If we were enabled to give to every individual man in the kingdom the sum of £200, the chances, for instance, are a hundred to one that he would not lay it out to advantage for himself or his children.

He would probably soon spend it, and his more frugal good managing neighbour would still be the rich man, and he the poor man; or even sup-

posing he were to put it out into trade, so small a capital would not produce proportionate returns to a larger sum.

The labour and skill of some men must probably be their capital as long as the world lasts: but it is to be hoped that their returns will be more certain, and that the time will come when every working-man, however poor, will be able to gain a maintenance, and a sufficiency for old age.

During the reign of George the Fourth, some great improvements were made in the laws and in the mode of executing them also.

Some of our most severe statutes were rendered milder, and many crimes were prevented, or rendered more easy of detection in London and its suburbs, by the establishment of a new police, instead of the old watch.

The management of prisons was also improved, and, to the great joy of many wise and good men, the statutes which prevented Dissenters from belonging to corporations, &c. were repealed.

Another measure also was carried in this reign of great impor-



Old Watchman.

tance, and this was the emancipation of the Catholics. Catholics are now permitted to sit in parliament, and to fill many offices of state from which they had been excluded before.

It had long appeared hard that the Catholics and Dissenters, if good and loyal subjects, should be disgraced merely on account of their religious opinions; and great were the rejoicings when these measures were carried.

We come now to the times of



New Policeman.

WILLIAM IV, 1830—1837,

Who rendered himself much beloved by his subjects for the readiness with which he at once turned his attention to every measure which might promote their good.

Instead of opposing the general feeling of the necessity of reforming the abuses which had crept into most departments of state affairs, he declared himself ready to go along with it, and this has in general rendered his reign popular, and himself beloved.

Sometimes the people have been unreasonable,

and sometimes the nobility and gentry, w^h George the Third's long reign had every their own way, have been too tenacious; b^u the whole, the last years of England and its ple have been prosperous.

A bill for the reformation of our parliameⁿt representation has been passed; slavery has abolished in the Colonies, and a system of prenticeship has been substituted.

Much has been done to beautify the diff^{er}ent cities of Great Britain; new squares, new s^q are constantly opened in London; new ga^rds also are laid out there for the people, and are permitted to go into the parks from wh^{er} they used to be excluded.



Zoological Gardens in Regent's Park.

A beautiful bridge has been built and op^{er} instead of old London Bridge; and peop^{le} admitted more freely to see the British Mus^{eum}

which contains such a multitude of curious and interesting objects.



New London Bridge.

Peace continues; and, though “plenty” for all has not yet come in its train, it is to be hoped the condition of the people is in the way of improvement.

The pains that have been taken to instruct them, and point out their duty and their interest, must have *some* effect, though not all that might be wished.

In the midst of much wickedness they have many examples of excellence; they have the clear instructions of the Bible, and the power very generally of reading it.

They also are in the way to learn that if they

would have the means of living they must neither be improvident nor slothful; that they must apply Christian principles to their own conduct, and not expect that *at all events* their country is bound to maintain themselves, and a helpless ill-brought-up offspring, in idleness and vice.

The rich too are learning to make greater sacrifices to the poor; to be less selfish; they think more of them and their wants. They feel it their duty to distribute their money, and any employment they have to give, in a judicious manner, so as that it will do the most good.

In elder times it was the custom to give money or food to all who asked; to dress the wounds of the sick when they applied at the gates of the monasteries; and ladies of rank often performed all the offices which nurses and physicians perform now.

But there were evils attending this: the poorer classes learned to be entirely dependent. There was no self-respect; no shame in being a beggar; no industrious habits were formed; but whole generations lived upon alms without performing one service for their race in return.

Now, greater pains are taken by all who wish to serve their fellow-creatures, in thinking upon the best modes of doing so: less may be done by the hands, but there is more consideration, and not, it is to be hoped, less benevolence at heart.

This is not so popular a course; for many people would rather be maintained without any return for what is given them: but in proportion as good principles and feelings spread, we shall see

that they will be glad to be helped in a way which shall increase their virtues rather than their faults.

I have mentioned, in numbering up some of the improvements of the last forty or fifty years, what a great deal has been done for the assistance of such of the people as wish for instruction, both in religious and mere temporal matters.

It has been said, that Bibles are circulated in immense numbers, and useful books made cheap and easy of access; besides which, schools and places of worship have multiplied greatly.

When we see however what a quantity of ignorance and wickedness there is in the world, we are sometimes startled and tempted to ask whether all these means have really done much good.

There can be no doubt they have: but piety and goodness are quiet, and are little heard of; while vice is always abroad.

But the grand conclusion I have come to, whenever I think much upon these things, is, that people are never really helped but when their wills are disposed to desire help.

A plentiful feast may be spread on our table; but we only benefit by it, on condition that we stretch out our hands and take what is offered, and put it to our mouths, that we may eat and live.

So Bibles and ministers, and schools and books, are placed within our reach; but we shall not be the better, if we do not attend to them: nor *then*, if our wills do not receive the truth, and let it govern our lives.

When I look back to the first days of the people of England, and trace their progress till now, I still see and feel the same thing, that the people are not the better for all that has been done for them, if their hearts are not turned to the Giver of Good.

I look back at the pious Alfred, and think how he improved his few talents. He lived in a time of darkness and discomfort; but his heart was right before God: his clear eye saw his duty, and his mind strengthened even while he practised it.

And let every Englishman, poor or rich, think of him too! a sinner, but penitent; a sufferer, but patient; surrounded by ignorance, yet striving for knowledge; without common comforts, but endeavouring to multiply them.

All that he did, and all that he was, was owing to his own ardent desire of improvement: if we too desire it, all the means offered us will be helps and comforts to us. If we do NOT, we shall still remain unimproved in the midst of all our advantages; poor, in the midst of abundance.

* * * * *

William the Fourth died on the twenty-sixth of June, 1837, and was succeeded by our present queen

VICTORIA,

Daughter of the Duke of Kent, who was the brother next in age to William the Fourth. This

young princess was carefully educated by a good mother, and has come to the throne accompanied by the hopes and willing affections of her people. May her reign be prosperous and happy !

THE END.

1

2







